

The Journal

of

Charles Wesley

Introduction

By Thomas Jackson

(1849)

1736 - 1740

1

2

Contents

Page

Introduction, by Thomas Jackson

5

Journal – 1736

43

Journal – 1737

101

Journal – 1738

122

Journal – 1739

179

Journal – 1740

234

3

4

Introduction, by Thomas Jackson

I.

RELIGIOUS projects and actions not unfrequently produce results which their authors never contemplated. When the two Wesleys at Oxford became impressed with the supreme importance of Christian piety, as the great end of their being, and regarded it as an absolute conformity to the will of God, they adopted the purest rules of conduct; keeping a constant watch over their minds and hearts, and subjecting themselves at stated periods to the most searching scrutiny; that they might ascertain whether or not they had fulfilled their sacred vows, or had trifled with their engagements and responsibilities. That they might be the better able to discharge the duty of self-examination, each of them commenced the practice of keeping a journal, in which they carefully recorded the events of every day, with their spiritual conflicts, victories, and failures; for the

purpose of calling forth increased gratitude, humility, or emotion, as the case might be. Of course these personal and moral histories were, in the first instance, never intended to meet the public eye, but merely to promote the religious benefit of the writers; for, when these simple-minded, but gifted, men began this practice, they intended to spend their lives in comparative retirement and seclusion, not having the most distant thought of the notoriety which was afterwards forced upon them.

In these matters, however, they were overruled, being providentially called from the cloisters of Oxford to preach salvation by faith in the highways and hedges; in consequence of which the world was filled with the report of their names and doings; and their journals, which were designed to be nothing more than a record of their feelings and course of action, the details of which no second person should ever peruse, are, in fact, the most circumstantial and authentic history of a deep and widely-extended revival of religion, such as the world has scarcely witnessed since the apostolic times.

Hence it is that these documents, so private and unpretending in their origin, possess a profound interest, which they will possess as long as the English language is understood, and Christianity in its

blessedness, activity, and power is duly appreciated.

5

After the brothers had entered upon their singular career of ministerial labour, so as to be in some quarters highly commended, and in others severely censured, - while multitudes wondered why it was that gentlemen and scholars violated all the rules of ecclesiastical etiquette, and voluntarily endured incredible toils and hardships, - Mr. John Wesley deemed it requisite to publish from time to time large extracts from his private journal, as furnishing, in his estimation, the best explanation and apology that he was able to offer. This practice he continued till the end of his life: and, notwithstanding all that has been subsequently written, it must be confessed that these artless narratives constitute the best history of the origin and progress of Methodism, and its most powerful defence.

For many years Mr. Charles Wesley followed his brother, as an itinerant and field Preacher, with equal steps; but he would never commit his journal to the press. He appears to have written it, from day to day, upon loose sheets of paper, and to have transmitted large portions of it to his wife and friends in the form of letters, some of which have been preserved. Much of it, there is reason to believe, he

himself destroyed; and it is probable that much more of it has long since perished, through the carelessness of the persons to whom it was transmitted. That which is now published, and which is all that is known to exist, was transcribed, with great neatness and accuracy, by the venerable author himself, carefully paged, and was bound in a thick octavo volume. This precious relic he bequeathed to his widow, with a request that she would retain it in her own exclusive possession. About three or four years after his death, it was, however, placed in the hands of Dr. Whitehead, who published large extracts from it in the Life of the author, which was prefixed to the Life of the Rev. John Wesley. Extracts from this manuscript, still more copious, were inserted in the "Life of the Rev. Charles Wesley," in two octavo volumes, which appeared in the year 1841; but the entire document is now for the first time presented to the public. It was purchased some years ago of the writer's heir, the late Charles Wesley, Esq., of musical celebrity; having, however, undergone some mutilations, the occasion of which it would perhaps be impossible to ascertain. A little while before it was purchased, it was in great danger of being irrecoverably lost. It was found among some loose straw on the floor of a public

warehouse in London, where the furniture of the owner was for a time deposited; several leaves in the volume being cut from the binding, and yet not removed. The intelligent and pious reader, it is presumed, after perusing and weighing its valuable contents, will be thankful that its publication effectually prevents the recurrence of a similar casualty, and will preserve it from oblivion. It is sent forth into the world, not to gratify an idle curiosity, but as an instructive record of a work of God; presenting, in a manner which every one may understand, the omnipotence of divine grace and truth.

II.

The published Journal of Mr. John Wesley commences with his embarkation at Gravesend for the North American continent, as a Missionary to the heathen tribes then bordering upon the infant colony of Georgia: Charles's begins with their arrival at the place of their destination. As the mission upon which they then entered was the first event in their lives that called forth their peculiar talents, and exhibited their capacities, - especially with respect to the patient endurance of hardships and privations, and the courage which never yields to difficulties, - it may not be improper to give a brief notice of the nature of that mission, and of the circumstances in which it was undertaken.

The colony of Georgia was projected by James Edward Oglethorpe, who was in many respects one of the most remarkable men of his age; having acquired considerable celebrity both as a soldier and a statesman, but most of all as a philanthropist. He was the fourth and youngest son of Sir Theophilus Oglethorpe, of Godalming, in the county of Surrey, and is said to have been born in the year 1698. In 1714 he entered Corpus Christi College, Oxford; but his destination was quickly changed; for in the same year we find him Captain-Lieutenant in the first troops of Queen's Guards. He afterwards acquired a more perfect acquaintance with the science of war under the famous Prince Eugene, of Savoy, and other eminent Commanders, among whom was the great Duke of Argyle, who was his patron. At the recommendation of John, Duke of Marlborough, Oglethorpe acted as Secretary and Aide-de-camp to the Prince, whom he attended in his campaigns in Germany and Hungary, where he acquired much

7

practical knowledge concerning military affairs. He had flattering prospects with respect to the German service, but sacrificed them all,

that he might apply his talents to the benefit of his own country.

On his return to England he was elected member of the House of Commons for the borough of Haslemere, which he represented in five

successive Parliaments, from 1722 to 1754. During this period many regulations, which had for their object the enlargement of the national commerce, were proposed by him, and adopted by the Senate; for he was a man of an active mind, of large views, of an enterprising genius, and a zealous patriot. While attending the sittings of Parliament, Oglethorpe, who was well acquainted with the Wesley family, and had generously assisted the venerable Rector of Epworth in his pecuniary difficulties, cultivated the friendship of Samuel Wesley, jun., who was one of the Ushers of Westminster School, and who for intelligence and moral worth was every way worthy of the statesman's confidence and respect. To the honour of Samuel Wesley, it is but just to state that, with a limited income, a subordinate situation, and many calls upon his friendly aid in behalf of his own relations, he was a principal means of establishing a Dispensary for the relief of the sick poor in Westminster: the first institution of the kind that was founded in that important city. In the year 1728, probably during the Parliamentary recess, this upright man, and excellent poet, addressed "An Ode to James Oglethorpe, Esq., in the Country," in which he expresses himself in such a manner as to convey the impression that a confidential familiarity subsisted between them; so that the senator would not be

offended to find himself publicly addressed as the poet's "friend." The last five stanzas contain a fine compliment to Oglethorpe, and not less

to Oglethorpe's father, who had also distinguished himself in the service of his country, but was favourable to the exiled family of the Stuarts.

From pole to pole our squadrons go,
Excelling ancient fables far,
Of Argo, when a ship below,
Or when exalted to a star:
Preserved from rocks and storms in vain,
Laden with wealth and fame they come;

8

Should erring counsellors ordain,
They suffer shipwreck here at home.
Them Virtue rises to defend,
In spite of numbers bold:
See Avarice awhile suspend
Its wonted thirst of gold!
What Pride or Fraud may have design'd,
See Reason overbear!
And fleets a port of safety find,

If OGLETHORPE is there.

The Pious grateful duty owes

To the dear land where he was born;

A glorious debt! which Nature knows

With fairest interest to return.

He merits first his country's praise

Who steers her helm through danger on;

And he deserves the second place,

Who guards her safety with a son.

'Twas thus the father of my friend

Wisely secured a lasting fame,

Beyond the reach of death to' extend

His public and domestic name.

'Tis single, 'tis imperfect light,

The world, from worth unwedded, shares;

He only shines completely bright,

Who leaves his virtues to his heirs.

O thus too may his offspring haste

His glory to improve,

And, fired by love to Britain, taste

The bliss of private love!

With joy his summons I attend,

And fly with speed away;

9

Let but the Patriot condescend

To fix his marriage-day!"

When these beautiful lines met the eye of Oglethorpe, he was engaged in an enterprise of mercy, for which he deserves to be ever had in respectful remembrance, and for which he received the blessings of multitudes who were ready to perish. He was the generous friend of the prisoner; and in the order of time took the precedence of Howard, of Sir Samuel Romilly, and of Sir Fowell Buxton, in zealous attempts to alleviate the misery of those outcasts of society, - the debtor and the felon. The manner in which he was induced to engage in this service, the nature of his efforts, and the results to which they led, are all worthy of special record. Early in the year 1728, an ingenious architect, of the name of Castel, died in the Fleet prison, where he was confined for debt. He was a friend of Oglethorpe, who used to visit him, doubtless for the purpose of relieving his necessities; and here Oglethorpe received information of

the hardships which the unfortunate man endured, and which were said to be the cause of his death. Oglethorpe justly concluded that this was not a solitary case, and therefore moved, in the House of Commons, for a Committee to inquire into the state of the jails in England. The proposal was accepted: a large and efficient Committee was appointed, of which Oglethorpe was made the Chairman.

On entering upon their work, fearful abuses were soon discovered, and appalling scenes of misery were presented to their view. It was found that when insolvent debtors entered the gloomy abodes to which they were destined, keeper after keeper extorted from them sums of money, under the name of fees; that these harpies not unfrequently seized, for their own use, articles of clothing of which they found the prisoners possessed, as well as supplies of food which were provided for them; that the keepers, according to their own caprice, tormented the prisoners by loading them with heavy irons, and inflicting upon them cruel stripes; that in many cases the prisoners had nothing in the shape of a bed to rest upon, but were doomed to sleep, if they could sleep at all, upon the unpaved floors of their cells; that when any of the prisoners, driven to desperation by hard treatment, committed suicide, their clothes were seized by the

keepers, as a perquisite of office; and that some of the most notorious prisoners of the age had effected their escape by means of bribes, which the jailers had accepted as the reward of their infidelity.

The Committee had not long been engaged in their inquiries, before they found occasion to draw up a series of resolutions, which Oglethorpe moved in the House of Commons, where they were unanimously adopted. They embody a specimen of the deeds of darkness which were then brought to light, and are to the following effect: - "That Thomas Bainbridge, acting Warden of the Fleet prison, hath wilfully permitted several debtors to the Crown in great sums of money, as well as debtors to divers of His Majesty's subjects, to escape; that he hath been guilty of the most notorious breaches of trust, great extortion, and the highest crimes and misdemeanours, in the execution of his office; and hath arbitrarily and unlawfully loaded with irons, put into dungeons, and destroyed, prisoners for debt, treating them in the most barbarous and cruel manner, in high violation and contempt of the laws of this kingdom: - That John Huggins, Esq., late Warden of the Fleet prison, did, during his wardenship, wilfully permit many considerable debtors in his custody to escape; and was notoriously guilty of great breaches of trust,

extortions, cruelties, and other high crimes and misdemeanours, in the execution of his office, to the great oppression and ruin of many of the subjects of this kingdom;

That James Barnes, William Pindar,

John Everett, and Thomas King, were agents of and accomplices with the said Thomas Bainbridge, in the commission of the said crimes." It was also agreed to address His Majesty, requesting him to command the Attorney-General to prosecute these offenders; who were ordered to be committed close prisoners to Newgate; and two bills were directed to be brought in: the one, to disable Thomas Bainbridge to hold the office of Warden of the Fleet, or exercise any authority relating thereto: the other, for the better regulating the Fleet prison, and more effectually preventing and punishing arbitrary and illegal practices in connexion with it.

These achievements of this Parliamentary Committee, in behalf of the oppressed, filled the mind of Oglethorpe's poetic friend with

11

thankfulness and admiration; and hence, one of the finest productions of Samuel Wesley's genius is entitled, "THE PRISONS OPENED: a

Poem, occasioned by the GLORIOUS PROCEEDINGS of the Committee of the House of Commons, appointed to inquire into the state of the

Jails of this kingdom, in the year 1728."

This poem is the more valuable because of the intimacy which subsisted between the author and Oglethorpe; so that the stirring facts which it describes may be fairly assumed to have been derived from that benevolent and energetic man, with whose kind feelings the poet cherished a deep sympathy. The poem is dedicated to Oglethorpe, with the other members of the Committee, and must have produced a thrilling interest at the time of its first appearance; the public mind not being then so familiar with subjects of this kind as it has been since the press was brought into greater requisition. A few brief extracts from this admirable composition, which evidently flowed from the writer's heart, will not be deemed irrelevant; in this place.

What various paths unhappy mortals tread,
Which down to dungeons and to tortures lead!

In jail a few secure their ill-got store;
By vices many fall, by folly more.

The flatter'd heir in short-lived pomp behold,
How flush'd with youth, and wine, and love, and gold!
All arts, all baits, unnumber'd tempters try,

Friendship's endearing form, and Beauty's eye.

Manors are lost, though petty stakes are won,

And garter'd sharpeners urge his ruin on.

By pity some (a glorious fault!) have fail'd,

A friend supported, or a father bail'd:

Some perish void of error and offence,

Cast headlong by resistless Providence:

Orphans, who frauds of guardians cannot shun;

Clients, by legal labyrinths undone;

The trader, strictly just, yet overthrown

12

By others' crimes, and losses not his own.

Nor more redress the breaking merchant finds

From Spanish seizures, than from adverse winds.

Lo! countless swarms the dire abode receives,

Thick as in autumn drop the sapless leaves,

Whom State deceit and South-Sea plunder drain'd,

Which like a general deluge swept the land;

Whom public faith could no protection lend,

Seeming, and only seeming, to defend. "

When wretches, stripp'd of Fortune's gifts, repair
To the dark dome of temporal despair,
Fast by the prison-gates, with sleepless eyes,
Sits griping, never-sated Avarice;
To him the' admitted fine for being poor,
And ope with gold the' inhospitable door;
Compell'd, since laws and jailers so ordain,
To pay for misery, and to bribe for pain:
To gain the' asylum of the Fleet they strive,
The privilege to be entomb'd alive.
So, as the Pagan fabling poets tell,
Was Charon fee'd for wafting souls to hell:
To pass the lake thick-thronging ghosts desire,
To torments most condemn'd, and penal fire
As if Alecto's snakes they long'd to feel,
Or Tityus' vulture, or Ixion's wheel.
The jail (sad emblem of flagitious times,
Revenging virtues, and rewarding crimes,)
Sees only villains thrive, by ruin great,
Who owe to guilt the splendour of their state;

Who, placed by fraud and wealth from justice free,

In ease or pomp enjoy captivity;

Who sure escape by massy gold can force,

While wardens share the wealth of creditors;

Or those who basely join to' afflict the good,

13

Comrades of theft, and instruments of blood;

Whose well-feign'd worth the merchant's trust deceives,

And stocks with monthly spoils the den of thieves;

Who, as superiors dictate, witness bear,

To riot, murder, nay, to treason, swear;

Who aid to worst barbarities afford,

Relentless hell-bounds, worthy of their lord

Who drink to burning Fever's thirst deny,

And see the famish'd swoon with stony eye;

Permit not prisoners even on alms to feed,

But snatch from starving mouths the scanty bread.

The Fleet's stern king, circled with guards like these,

Each helpless subject robs, and strips, and fleas;

Incarnate fiends for torturing shackles call,

Except the captive yields them - more than all:
In prison within prison staked he lies,
And keepers under keepers tyrannize:
With weighty fetters gall'd, the sufferers groan,
Or close-screw'd rivets crack the solid bone;
Their only bed dank earth, unpaved and bare,
Their only covering is the chains they wear:
Debar'd from cheerful morn, and human sight,
In lonely, restless, and enduring night;
The strongest health unsinew'd by disease,
And Famine wasting life by slow degrees:
Piecemeal alive they rot, long doom'd to bear
The pestilential, foul, imprison'd air;
Unless the friendly fumes on reason prey,
And kind Distraction take their sense away.
But each black view of horrible restraint,
What verse can number, and what pencil paint
Dire scenes! which Huggins and his Bainbridge know,
Where ghastly spectres utter tales of woe;
As if the prisoners were condemn'd to dwell

With pains, with darkness, and with fiends of hell.

14

No smallest glimpse of distant hope they see;

O lowest depth of human misery!

When wish'd for death's approach shows quiet nigh,

The soul just fluttering is forbid to fly;

Then, seeming kind, the curst tormentors strive

To keep departing anguish still alive.

So when the long-robed murderers of Rome,

Inquisitors, a wretch to tortures doom,

They heal the limbs which can no more endure,

Less cruel when they rack than when they cure,

That nature, spent, recruits of strength may gain.

For fresh distortion, and repeated pain.

When wild despair, impatient of its woes,

By fond self-murder would suborn repose,

A life destroy'd unmoved the keeper sees,

And only mourns his loss of bribes and fees.

Here, though his barbarous rigours find an end,

Farther will powerful avarice extend:

Like the Grand Turk, he pleases to declare
Himself, of all that die, the general heir:
What every vassal leaves he speaks his own,
But yields no portion to the wife or son.
So Purgatory's realm the Pope obeys,
The founder he and warden of the place!
There souls are feign'd fierce flames to undergo,
Intense as everlasting burnings glow;
Though Christ had clear'd their guilt, they long remain,
Pardon'd, and prisoners to infernal pain;
No charitable Pontiff turns the keys,
Till priestly jailers have secured their fees.
Is ours the land where peace and freedom smile?
What wrathful influence cursed our age and isle,
Monsters of boundless avarice to see,
Unblushing fraud, unsated cruelty
Yet, Britain, cease thy captives' woes to mourn,

15

To break their chains, see OGLETHORPE was born!
Vernon, whose steady truth no threats can bend!

And Hughes, the sailor's never-falling friend!
Towers, whose rich youth can ease and pleasure fly,
And Percival, renown'd for piety!
Cornewall, to aid the friendless never slow,
Whose generous breast still melts at others' woe!
These dare the tyrants, long secure, oppose;
Thus gracious Heaven its benefits bestows,
The antidote is found there where the poison grows.
Soon as the Fleet receives each welcome guest,
Joy, long-forgotten, cheers the faintest breast;
Pain at their presence stops the rising sigh,
And languid Famine opes her hollow eye;
Horror flies thence, they once appearing there,
And the worst torment of the jail-Despair.
So, at the' Almighty's nod, with rapid wings,
Forth from the throne a guardian angel springs,
Through space immense, quick as the morning ray,
To succour earth distress'd he shoots away,
Bids Peter rise, from bonds and keepers free,
And looks the prisoner into liberty.

Fear'd, honour'd, loved, long may the Patriots stand,

Support and honour of their native land!

Warm without rage, without vain-glory brave,

Firm to protect, and obstinate to save!

Whom no false scents deceive, no searches tire;

Resistless to revenge, as to inquire!

He who for injured right dares strongly plead,

The prisoner's counsel, earnest, though unfee'd;

To guard the weak, who scorns the mighty's frown,

Despising no man's danger but his own;

In camps his courage as in senates tried,

Daunts with severe rebuff the sons of pride:

O that his soul with healthier limbs were join'd,

16

A body less unequal to his mind!

Proceed, disinterested few, proceed,

Heal every wound, and succour every need;

Let all Britannia's misery be redress'd,

Cite every tyrant to the righteous test

The test which innocence can never fear,

Candid though strict, impartial though severe.
No artful guesses there to proofs advance,
Help'd by dark, dubious, distant circumstance;
Nor bribes, nor threats, nor hinting prompters there
Inform the wavering witness how to swear.
Go on! let none your ardent zeal withstand,
And shower diffusive mercies o'er the land,
That Heaven by you may bless our happy isle,
And even the tradesman and the merchant smile;
While crowds unchain'd your fame with shouts declare,
Restored to vital light, and vital air.
So sudden this deliverance which they meet,
Their grief so hopeless, and their joy so great,
Scarce to the change they yet can credit give,
Scarce are they yet persuaded that they live.
So, when the' archangel gives the fated sign,
(If human joys we liken to divine,)
The summons universal Nature hears,
Nor pleads prescription of six thousand years;
Not everlasting hills their dead retain,

Not deep abysses of the' unfathom'd main;
The sleeping saints look up with joyful eyes,
And, quickening at the sacred trump, arise;
Their pains all past, their transport to succeed,
Immortal lives in endless bloom they lead,
From death's tyrannic chain, and earth's dark prison, freed."

Samuel Wesley was not the only poet who celebrated the
generous deeds of Oglethorpe and his associates. The muse of

17

Thomson poured forth the following strains in honour of "the Jail
Committee, in the year 1729:"

"And here can I forget the generous bend,
Who, touch'd with human woe, redressive search'd
Into the horrors of the gloomy jail
Unpitied and unheard, where misery moans,
Where sickness pines, where thirst and hunger burn,
And poor Misfortune feels the lash of Vice.
While in the land of liberty, the land
Whose every street and public meeting glow
With open freedom, little tyrants raged,
Snatch'd the lean morsel from the starving mouth,

Tore from cold wintry limbs the tatter'd weed,
Even robb'd them of the last of comforts, - sleep;
The freeborn BRITON to the dungeon chain'd,
Or, as the lust of cruelty prevail'd,
At pleasure mark'd him with inglorious stripes,
And crush'd out lives, by secret, barbarous ways,
That for their country would have toil'd or bled.
O great design, if executed well,
With patient care, and wisdom-temper'd zeal!
Ye sons of mercy! yet resume the search,
Drag forth the legal monsters into light,
Wrench from their hands Oppression's iron rod,
And bid the cruel feel the pains they give.
Much still untouch'd remains; in this rank age,
Much is the patriot's weeding hand required.
The toils of law, (what dark, insidious men
Have cumbrous added to perplex the truth,
And lengthen simple justice into trade,
How glorious were the day that saw these broke,
And every man within the reach of right!"

III.

ONE act of generosity prepares the way for another. Scarcely had Oglethorpe succeeded, with the aid of his associates, in dragging to open view the scandalous abuses which were practised in the public prisons, and in restoring many of their unfortunate inmates to liberty, before we find him engaged in an undertaking of greater magnitude and difficulty, the management of which devolved principally upon himself. This was the establishment of the colony of Georgia; the idea of which, in all probability, was suggested to his mind by the situation of the men whom he had rescued from the fangs of the jailer, and the horrors of imprisonment. Many of them were without character and without property; and to put them into a way of providing for themselves, in their own country, was a hopeless task. Emigration seemed to be their only practicable resource; and their number was such as to require extensive arrangements, in order that their case might be effectually relieved.

Upon this subject the friends of the colony laid great stress when making their appeal to the people of England for help. In an able pamphlet, which was published in a handsome quarto size, and

entitled, "Reasons for establishing the Colony of Georgia," the following course of argument is employed, "in respect of those who are thrown into prison for debt:" - "I believe the calculation will not be thought immodest, if I estimate these at four thousand every year; and that above one third part of the debts is never recovered hereby. If one half of these, or only five hundred of them, were to be sent every year into Georgia, to be incorporated with those foreign Protestants who are expelled their own countries for religion, what great improvements might not be expected in our trade, when these, as well as the foreigners, would be so many new subjects gained to England! for, while they are in prison, they are absolutely lost. The public loses their labour and their knowledge. If they take the benefit of the Act of Parliament, that allows them liberty on the delivery of their all to their creditors, they come naked into the world again; as they have no money, and little credit, they find it almost impossible to get into business, especially when our trades are overstocked; they therefore, by contracting new debts, must return again into prison, or, how honest soever their dispositions may be, by idleness and necessity will

19

be forced into bad courses, such as begging, cheating, or robbing."

"The colony of Georgia will be a proper asylum for these. Here

they will have the best motive for industry, - a possession of their own, and no possibility of subsisting without it.

"I have heard it said that our prisons are the properest places for those who are thrown into them, by keeping them from being hurtful to others. Surely this way of thinking is too severe. Are these people, with their liberty, to lose our compassion? Are they to be shut up from our eyes, and excluded from our hearts? Many of very honest dispositions fall into decay, nay, perhaps because they are so, because they cannot allow themselves that latitude which others take to be successful. The ways that lead to ruin are various. Some are undone by over-trading; others by want of trade; many by being responsible for others. Do all these deserve such hardship? If a man sees a friend, a brother, or a father, going to a prison, where felons are to be his society, want and sickness his sure attendants, and death, in all likelihood, his only but quick relief; if he stretches out his hand to save him; if, to rescue him from immediate slavery and ruin, he runs the risk of his own liberty, and at last loses it; is there any one who will say this man is not an object of compassion not only so, but of esteem, and worth preserving for his virtue! But, supposing that idleness and intemperance are the usual cause of his ruin, are these crimes

adequate to such a punishment as confinement for life? But even granting that these unhappy people deserve no indulgence, it is certainly imprudent in any state to lose the benefit of the labour of so many thousands.

"But the public loss, by throwing men into prison, is not confined to them only. They have, many of them, wives and children. These are also involved in their ruin. Being destitute of support, they must perish, or become a burden to their parishes by their inability to work, or a nuisance by their thefts."

The subject and the earnestness of this appeal clearly connect the origin of the colony of Georgia with the Parliamentary inquiry into the state of the English prisons, the conducting of which had been confided to Oglethorpe; especially when we find that some of the men who were associated with him in redressing the wrongs of the

20

prisoner, were his fellow-Trustees for the new colony. Among these we may particularly mention Thomas Towers and James Vernon, Esqrs., and Lord Viscount Percival.

But Englishmen of desperate fortunes were not the only parties whose interests it was intended to secure by the transatlantic colony.

Protestant exiles from various continental nations, the victims of

Papal intolerance and cruelty, were invited to share in the benefits which were provided in this promising settlement. Of this class of persons who availed themselves of the invitation, the Salzburghers, as they were called, were the first and the most numerous. A few notices concerning these interesting people will serve at once to show the generosity of Oglethorpe, and of the men who were associated with him; the importance of the colony at that particular juncture; the execrable intolerance of Popery; and the spirit of meekness, resignation, and fidelity, with which Christianity inspires those who are under its power.

Salzburg is a city of Bavaria, the Archbishop of which was a temporal Prince, as well as an ecclesiastical dignitary. In his dominions were several Protestants, some of whom held the tenets of the Lutherans, and others those of the Reformed. True to the principles of his Church, he declared that he "should be inexcusable if, as an ecclesiastical Prince, he should tolerate the exercise of a religion in his Archbishopric contrary to the Roman Catholic religion; which," added he, "by the grace of God, is of more than twelve hundred years' standing." He therefore prohibited all public worship and preaching among his Protestant subjects; forbidding more than three persons

ever to meet together on a religious account. Finding that even this severe measure was not sufficient to arrest the progress of alleged heresy, he issued an edict requiring all his Protestant subjects to leave his dominions; claiming for himself the credit of "clemency," for granting them permission to leave their homes and country.

"Workmen, valets, or domestics of both sexes," were to depart, with all their effects, in eight days. A month's time was granted to such

Protestants as were worth one hundred and fifty florins, and two months to such as were possessed of property to a greater amount,

that they "might sell their effects in the best manner they could;" and in the mean while, all Protestants who were engaged in the public

21

service were dismissed, and their wages discontinued. This merciless edict bears the date of October 31st, 1731; it was sent forth in the

name of "Leopold, by the grace of God, Archbishop of Salzburg, Legate of the Holy See Apostolical, and Primate of Germany," and addressed

"to all our Vice-Deans, Bailiffs, Provosts, Governors, their substitutes, Judges, and to all our other officers, greeting ;" and was therefore

brought into general operation in the middle of winter. At this

inclement season, therefore, TWENTY THOUSAND SIX HUNDRED

AND SEVENTY-EIGHT PERSONS, men, women, and children, the aged,

the sick, new-born infants, with their mothers, were driven from the

land of their fathers, and sent forth through fields of snow, in quest of a people who were not hardened into fiends by Papal superstition, and among whom they might dwell in safety and peace.

These persecuted exiles divided themselves into different companies, and went forth in various directions, as circumstances might dictate, obtaining sympathy and aid from the pious and humane, but often cruelly insulted by the sons of Rome. Letters from Germany, detailing the hardships and wrongs which these people endured, with the meek and devout spirit by which the sufferers were actuated, were sent to England; and some of these narrations were presented in translations to the public, producing deep emotion in many an English heart; for the Protestant monarchy of this country was then comparatively weak, so that many British subjects trembled for their own liberties and rights. We select a few paragraphs from a scarce and interesting pamphlet, entitled, "An Account of the Sufferings of the persecuted Protestants of Salzburg, with their Reception in several Imperial Cities in Germany: together with their Confession of Faith: taken from Authentic Papers; To which is added, the Archbishop's Decree and Passport, and two Letters relating thereto, from the Evangelic Body at Ratisbon. 1732."

"KAUFFBEYERN. On St. John's day, after Christmas, 1731, late at night, when the city gates were shut, about eight hundred Protestant exiles of Salzburg, of both sexes, arrived here, under the guidance of a Bavarian messenger. They had been driven out of their native country for the sake of their religion, and forced to leave their all behind them. A report was spread that they had themselves desired to be conducted hither; but, upon inquiry, they solemnly protested that they had not

22

known whither they were to go; and that all they desired was, to be admitted into some Protestant town, for the spiritual comfort of their souls. After the arrival of these poor people, (who were very meanly clothed, and were for the most part labouring people and servants, and had brought a few children with them,) they patiently waited without the city-gates for admission, (which they had earnestly solicited by about forty of their deputies, who arrived just before the gates were shut,) singing, with great devotion, Luther's hymn, 'God is our Refuge in distress,' &c.

"Orders were soon given for their reception; and some of them had lodgings assigned them in the Protestant inns, whilst many were received into private houses, not without many tears. They were as hospitably entertained as the smallness of the place would admit of,

and provided with spiritual and temporal food till the 30th of December. On Innocents' day they heard, for the first time, the morning sermon; and at noon they attended a sermon suited to their present circumstances, at which they expressed an uncommon desire and zeal for the word of God. Their behaviour among us was as became true Christians. They were modest, humble, peaceable, contented with, and thankful for, whatever was given them; and expressed the greatest delight in praying, singing psalms, and reading good books.

"As they had been expelled their country on a sudden, and not permitted to furnish themselves with necessaries for their journey, our Protestant citizens have testified their charity to them, by furnishing them with useful books, and better clothing for this cold season, and with food and money. Several of them have been taken into service in the town; some of the children put out apprentices, and to school; and their sick and weak provided for in the hospital. "When the Roman Catholic members of our Magistracy had complained in form of the stay of these poor people, and other circumstances had intervened which rendered their further entertainment here very difficult, (especially since nineteen thousand more were to make their

pilgrimage through these parts,) we came to this resolution, that all who could not be provided for here, should be sent through three different roads to Memmingen, Augsburg, and Kempten, under the conduct of some of our Protestant citizens. The necessary passports,

23

with the money collected at the church-door towards defraying the expenses of their journey, were delivered to the deputies that went to

conduct them; and four waggons were provided for carrying the old weak people and the children, with the few things they had brought with them.

"On the day of their departure, after they had heard the morning sermon, and had taken necessary refreshment, they repaired to our Trinity church, at noon, where they heard a farewell discourse, with many tears, and a hearty affection for the word of God, and concluded with the hymn, 'God is our Refuge in distress,' which was sung only by themselves. After this, the deputies led them, two by two, between the Mayor and Aldermen, on one side of the church door, and the reverend Ministry on the other. Being dismissed by the citizens with innumerable blessings, they took their several roads in God's name, like so many flocks of sheep, with great patience and humility.

"Although we could not imagine that the quiet march of these

poor exiles would be anywhere obstructed, yet they that were ordered to go to Kempten found that not one of their number could be permitted to pass that way. The deputy went to lodge them in Ober Beuern, a village belonging to this city, till further orders. But the Roman Catholics of that place opposed their entrance in so violent a manner, that all their lives had been in danger if they had not retired. They therefore came back to this city, and were lodged at the Golden Crown. The next day, being the 31st of December, they were sent to Memmingen, where they met with a joyful reception."

"AUGSBURG. On the 30th of December, 1731, the Protestant Magistracy of Augsburg, having had notice given them, by the Magistracy and Ministry of Kauffbeyern, that eight hundred exiles of Salzburg had arrived there, and intended to march thither, earnestly desiring, for the sake of Christ, that they would receive them; the same was immediately communicated by the reverend Ministry of this city to the congregation at the cathedral church of St. Anne. As soon as the sermon was ended, the Protestant Senate met, with our head Almoner and Recorder; and, having resolved to make a collection on New-Year's day, for the benefit of these poor people, they desired the senior Rectors to draw up an account of them, to be read after the noon and

evening sermons. But When the Protestant part of the Senate acquainted the Roman Catholic part, that many Salzburg exiles were expected, and should be divided among the Protestants, without the least molestation to the Roman Catholics, the Roman Catholics opposed their admission, under several pretexts, insomuch that nothing could be effected; but we were obliged to quarter them among the Protestants of the suburbs, some in inns, others in silver and copper mills, in sawing mills, the hospital, and garden-houses. To all this the inhabitants expressed so great a readiness, that they who were not able to receive any, lamented it as their misfortune. So great was the charity of all ranks of people, that they had not patience to wait for their coming; but, some on foot, some on horseback, and some in coaches, went to meet them several miles out of the town. Two hundred of them, with their deputed Commissary of Kauffbeyern, arrived that evening, and marched two by two over the fields, amidst some thousands of people, both Papists and Protestants, some of whom distributed money among them. Every Protestant was desirous to comfort and relieve these distressed brethren. Several tradesmen and merchants were not ashamed to call them brethren and sisters in

the fields. They were ordered into their assigned quarters; and there they lifted up their hands to heaven, and gave thanks to God.

"On New-Year's day, after the morning service, the Protestant Senate ordered the two senior Rectors of the Augustan Confession to preach to these poor exiles, in two different places without the city. This was done accordingly, in the presence of a great multitude of people, in Mr. Schawer's garden. The service began with singing the hymn, 'Commit thy ways and doings'.

Then followed a prayer, suited to the circumstances of the exiles: then a discourse on the name of Jesus, with a particular application to the occasion; showing how this holy Name ought to influence the conduct both of the Augsburgers and the exiles.

"They are generally of good courage, and, notwithstanding all the misery they have gone through, of a cheerful temper. There appears so much honesty and fidelity in their countenances, that one may almost affirm they are without guile. They are, for the most part, of a robust constitution, and from twenty to thirty-six years of age; though some

25

few of them are from forty to sixty.

"These people behave themselves not only very thankfully,

contentedly, meekly, and patiently, but, when they have an occasion of mentioning their afflictions, they do it without the least bitterness or murmuring against their former superiors: and they incessantly pray, with many tears, for their relations whom they have left behind, not knowing what sufferings they may have to undergo.

"As to those who were sent to Memmingen, they have been received as brethren and sisters, and carefully provided for. The greatest part of those who are yet come are poor labouring people and servants; but some of those who are to follow are of better condition. Some are still in prison, where they content themselves with bread and water, praying, and singing psalms or hymns.

"The third part of these exiles, who went to Ulm, found their way prepared by God. They were conducted, amidst a great concourse of people, from the Danube-gate to the Town-House, singing all the way the hymns which begin thus:- God is our Refuge in distress,' and, 'He that confides in his Creator.' Many thousands of people were excited by these exiles to join with them in praising God. They were immediately ordered out of the cold, into a warm room, every one being desirous to give them some refreshment. After the Magistrate had taken an account of them, they were quartered in the several inns

of the town, which were hardly large enough to contain the great concourse of other Protestants who flocked thither, who all joined with one accord in praises and thanksgivings to God, and continued till late at night.

"The next day the Rev. Rector Frick preached a sermon upon Gen. 12:1, 2. As this discourse was chiefly applied to the Salzburgers, it is impossible to express with what attention they heard the word of God. They stood like people who have had no food for a great while, and therefore wait with greater eagerness to receive some to satisfy their hunger.

"Being averse to nothing more than idleness, and ready to undertake the hardest labour, many have already found a subsistence, as we hope the rest very shortly will."

26

In their own country, at first, all pains were taken to dissuade them from the Protestant religion, by arguments from worldly interest; and when that would not do, their books, which they had been many years in collecting, were seized in several places; and it is reported of the Dean of Werffen, that he burned them. After they were thus deprived of the word of God, their enemies proceeded to more violent means. Many were apprehended, particularly those who were

suspected to be leaders, and sent in fetters, dressed in derision with white caps, which hung down to their breasts, into the deepest dungeons in Salzburg; and others have been sent away, their relations not knowing whither. When this would not do, the Papists threatened them with beheading, drowning, the galleys, and the like. To all this these poor people made only the following reply: 'In God's name; in God's name.' When it was found that they could not be brought by any of these means to love their lives and fortunes more than God and His truth, they were on a sudden ordered to leave the country; and these orders were immediately executed with all imaginable rigour. Some were taken from the field; others were dragged naked out of their beds. All had a sudden summons to depart; and very few were permitted to sell their goods, or take anything necessary with them. Many have been obliged to leave their wives and substance behind them, and to go away deprived of all they had in the world. And what increased their calamity was, that they were forced to begin their journey in the depth of winter, when the cold is most severe. The first eight hundred spent five whole weeks in their journey, and that in the most bitter cold and stormy weather; and were a fortnight in wandering over mountains and hills, not knowing whither they went.

This fatigued and emaciated them so much, that they were almost starved, having been in want of bread for three days together. This is the case of these poor exiles, whose number will be considerably augmented by those that are yet to come."

"AUGSBURG. Jan. 26th, 1732, there arrived in our neighbourhood five hundred more exiles of Salzburg, besides their women and children. One of our Protestant Aldermen was immediately sent to meet them, who read their passports, registered them, and provided a dinner for the whole company. After which they were divided into parties; so that one hundred in one place, eighty in another, sixty in a

27

third, and fifty in a fourth, might be quartered for this first day without the city; and, when they were arrived in their lodgings, they

sang hymns and prayed with great devotion. There were with them three waggons full of women, new-born children, and old people, who were taken to the hospital. It was a signal mercy that they did not all perish with cold; considering that they came in a severe frost, being poor, and many of them very bare. Indeed, some did fall sick by the hardships they endured; among whom was an old man, since dead, who, being asked whether he was not sorry for having left his native country, answered, 'No: I die with joy, and in a hope of a better life.'"

The publication in England of details like these could not fail to make a deep impression upon the public mind. Several persons of known probity and honour engaged to receive contributions for the relief of these suffering people; and British charity placed in their hands the noble sum of £33,000 for that purpose. Oglethorpe not only mentioned their case in Parliament, but also proposed to his brother Trustees of the projected colony, that they should give a general invitation to these pious strangers to accept of a settlement and asylum there. To this they readily assented; so that the invitation was given; and by many of the expatriated Salzburgers it was gratefully accepted.

In the meanwhile arrangements were made with all practicable expedition for the commencement of this great undertaking. The House of Commons voted £10,000 in behalf of the colony; congregational collections were extensively made for the same object; and the general fund was greatly augmented by private liberality. A ship was engaged, of about two hundred tons' burden; the emigrants, consisting of thirty-five families, including one hundred and sixteen settlers, among whom were farmers, carpenters, bricklayers, &c., embarked at Deptford, November 16th, 1782; Oglethorpe

accompanying them at his own expense, and being debarred by the charter from receiving any pecuniary benefit from the scheme which he had originated, and engaged to carry into effect. On the 13th of January following they arrived at Charlestown, in Carolina, where they were kindly received; and from thence Oglethorpe proceeded, with his fellow-voyagers, and such help as he could obtain, to the tract of country which was assigned them, and which is situated between

28

Florida and the province of Carolina. Here they formed the plan of a town, to which they gave the name of Savannah, from the river with which it is connected. Portions of land were also allotted to the settlers.

While Oglethorpe was thus employed, the Trustees of the colony, whom he had left behind, were not unmindful of the persecuted Salzburgers. A ship was sent to Rotterdam, for the purpose of receiving such of them as were willing to embark under the British banner for the American wilderness. They were first conveyed to Dover, and doubtless received there the requisite supplies for their voyage and ultimate destination. From thence they sailed, January 8th, 1784, for the far west, accompanied by two of their own Ministers, and by Baron Von Reck, as Commissary. They were cordially received

at Chariestown, where they met with Oglethorpe, and afterwards at Savannah, where the English settlers saluted them with a hearty cheer, to which they gave an equally hearty response. The choice of a situation was offered to them; and they selected one, the scenery of which bore some resemblance to that of their own country. Here they knelt down before God, in grateful acknowledgment of all His mercies to them in their extensive and perilous wanderings; with the Bible in their hands, they then marched up to the place which they deemed the most suitable as the site of a town; they then sang a hymn, and one of the Pastors pronounced the usual benediction. To the town which they intended forthwith to build they gave the name of EBENEZER.

Having made these arrangements, and provided for the maintenance of order during his absence, Oglethorpe left the colony, May 7th, 1734, and arrived at St. Helen's, in the Isle of Wight, on the 16th of June; bringing with him several Indians of distinction, who declared their desire that both they and their people should be instructed in the Christian religion, and also stand in a friendly relation to the British subjects who had recently become their neighbours. He was received in England with the greatest respect; and was everywhere met with congratulations on the success of his

benevolent enterprise. Among other persons who addressed him in this strain was the venerable Rector of Epworth, who, though labouring under the infirmities of age and disease, had still a heart to feel for the welfare of mankind. The following letter, which was

29

written by him, has never before appeared in any work that has issued from the British press: -

"Epworth, July 6th, 1734.

"To James Oglethorpe,

Esq."

"HONOURED SIR, - May I be admitted, while such crowds of our nobility and gentry are pouring in their congratulations, to press with my poor mite of thanks into the presence of one who so well deserves the title of UNIVERSAL BENEFactor OF MANKIND! It is not only your

valuable layouts on many accounts to my son, late of Westminster, and myself, when I was not a little pressed in the world, nor your more extensive charity to the poor prisoners; it is not these only that so much demand my warmest acknowledgments, as your disinterested and immovable attachment to your country, and your raising a new colony, or rather a little world of your own, in the midst of wild woods

and uncultivated deserts, where men may live free and happy, if they are not hindered by their own stupidity and folly, in spite of the unkindness of their brother mortals.

"I owe you, Sir, besides this, some account of my little affairs since the beginning of your expedition. Notwithstanding my own and my son's violent illness, which held me half a year, and him above twelve months, I have made a shift to get more than three parts in four of my Dissertations on Job printed off, and both the paper, printing, and maps, hitherto, paid for. My son John at Oxford, now that his elder brother is gone to Tiverton, takes care of the remainder of the impression at London; and I have an ingenious artist here with me in my house at Epworth, who is graying and working off the remaining maps and figures for me; so that I hope, if the printer does not hinder me, I shall have the whole ready by next spring; and: by God's leave, I shall be in London myself, to deliver the books perfect. I print five hundred copies, as in my proposals; hereof I have about three hundred already subscribed for; and among my subscribers, fifteen or sixteen English Bishops, with some in Ireland.

"If you will please herewith to accept the tender of my most sincere respect and gratitude, you will thereby confer one further

obligation, honoured Sir, on "Your most obedient and humble servant,
SAMUEL WESLEY.

30

The learned writer of this beautiful epistle was disappointed in his plans. Instead of going to London the following spring, to deliver with

his own hands to the subscribers the elaborate volume upon which he had expended much time and thought, he passed to his final reward;

dying on the 25th of April, 1735, in the seventy-second year of his age.

After his death it was proposed to his sons John and Charles, to accompany Oglethorpe to Georgia; John as a Missionary to the Indians, and Charles as Oglethorpe's Secretary. To this proposal they demurred for some time, particularly on account of the situation of their mother; but when the matter was proposed to her, she at once gave her free consent. Notwithstanding her widowhood, and the straitened circumstances in which she was placed, this noble-minded woman said, "Had I twenty sons, I should rejoice that they were all so employed, though I should never see them more."

The brothers were considered to be eminently qualified for the work which they were requested to undertake, by the zeal and earnestness with which they applied themselves to the duties of religion and benevolence, and by their habits of strict self-denial; each

of them possessing what they afterwards so appropriately expressed,
A soul inured to pain,
To hardship, grief, and loss,
Bold to take up, firm to sustain,
The consecrated cross."

It is not generally known that Mr. John Wesley went to Georgia under the sanction of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts. He was well known to Dr. Burton, the estimable President of Corpus Christi College, Oxford, who was one of the Trustees of the colony. Dr. Burton introduced him to Oglethorpe, who pressed him to undertake the mission; and, having gained his consent, the Trustees recommended him to the Society, by whom he was readily accepted; and it was resolved that he should receive £50 a year from the Society's funds. He was to take the place of a Clergyman of the name of Quincy, who was already in Georgia, but wished to return; and Mr. Wesley's salary was to commence from the time of Quincy's departure.

31

During Oglethorpe's stay in England, several other emigrants found their way to Georgia. The Indian Chiefs, after an introduction to

royalty, and a sight of the most interesting objects in London and its vicinity, returned to their native land, laden with rich presents, accompanied by many more of the Salzburg exiles. A considerable number of hardy Scotchmen also removed, with their families, to this genial soil and climate, where they had every reason to believe that their labour would be rewarded by plenty. Oglethorpe himself prepared to return, accompanied by a large number of additional emigrants; and greater caution was used in the selection of them than was deemed necessary in the first instance; for some of the men, who had formerly been taken from the streets and jails of London, being unaccustomed to hard labour, were rather a burden than a benefit to the new settlement; their habits being indolent and litigious. Two ships having been engaged, the "London Merchant" and the "Simmons," and all things being in readiness for the voyage, on the 13th of October, 1735, fifty-six men, women, and children, Salzburgers, accompanied by Von Reck, who had attended the transport of 1733, and Captain Hermsdorf, went on board the "London Merchant." The charge of their subsistence and journey from Ratisbon and Augsburg to Rotterdam, and from thence to London, was defrayed by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign

Parts, out of the collections which were committed to them for that purpose. These interesting strangers were accompanied by some members of the Moravian Church, who, being persecuted by the Papists in Bohemia, sought an asylum in this new colony, where religious liberty was offered as a common boon. The next day the two Wesleys, the Rev. Benjamin Ingham, who was one of the Oxford Methodists, and Charles Delamotte, the son of a London merchant, who voluntarily offered his services as the friend and assistant of Mr. John Wesley, went by water to Gravesend, for the purpose of taking their places on board the "Simmons;" where they were joined by Oglethorpe, and by a great number of poor English families, who were sent out at the expense of the Trustees. The two ships soon after sailed for their destination.

This renewed and enlarged expedition of philanthropy was regarded by religious and benevolent people with entire satisfaction;

32

and the energy, patriotism, and disinterested generosity of Oglethorpe commanded universal admiration. One of the King's sloops was ordered to convey him across the Atlantic; but he chose rather to sail with the Missionaries and the poor emigrants. Amidst the general excitement the poets celebrated his deeds of valour and benevolence.

Samuel Wesley, who had sung the praises of his friend on the occasion of his interference in behalf of oppressed prisoners, now published, a handsome folio pamphlet, under the title of, "Georgia, a Poem; Tomo Chichi, an Ode; and a Copy of Verses on Mr. Oglethorpe's Second Voyage to Georgia." He thus addresses the former settlers: -

See once again, see on your shores descend

Your generous leader, your unwearied friend!

No storm of chance his vessel thither drives;

No! to secure and bless you, he arrives.

To Heaven the praise, - and thanks to him repay,

And let remotest times respect the day.

He comes, whose life, while absent from your view,

Was one continued ministry for you;

For you he laid out all his pains and art,

Won every will, and soften'd every heart.

With what paternal joy shall he relate

How views the mother Isle your little state;

How aids the Senate, how the nation loves,

How GEORGE protects, and CAROLINE approves!

A thousand pleasures crowd into his breast;

But one, one mighty thought absorbs the rest:

And 'Give me, Heaven, to see' (the patriot cries)

'Another Britain in the desert rise! "'

With reference to the same occasion Thomson poured forth the following laudatory strains:-

Lo! swarming southward on rejoicing suns,

Gay colonies extend; the calm retreat

Of undeserved distress, the better home

Of those whom bigots chase from foreign lands.

Nor built on Rapine, Servitude, and Woe,

33

And in their turn some petty tyrant's prey;

But, bound by social Freedom, firm they rise:

Such as, of late, an Oglethorpe has form'd,

And, crowding round, the charm'd Savannah sees."

Even Pope, who was far more inclined to satirize than commend, could not withhold his meed of praise from the founder of Georgia:-

"Or, driven by strong benevolence of soul,

Will fly, like OGLETHORPE, from pole to pole."

The labours of the two Wesleys in Georgia, the defectiveness of

their religious views at this period, the failure of their mission, their return to England, the manner in which they were more perfectly instructed in the way of the Lord, their subsequent labours and success, are all matters of history, and are generally known; but, upon all these interesting subjects, further light will be thrown by the two volumes which are now before the reader.

The particulars of Oglethorpe's life which have just been related possess a more than common interest; inasmuch as they present a striking illustration of the fact, which is continued by the entire history of the church, that it pleases Almighty God often to accomplish the most important objects of His wisdom and mercy by means the most simple and unpromising. An insolvent debtor dies in one of the prisons of London, in circumstances which awaken suspicion in the mind of his friend, Who obtains a Parliamentary commission to inquire into the state of prisons generally. The inquiry leads to the emancipation of large numbers of poor men, the victims of oppression, with damaged character, who are thrown upon society in a state of destitution and helplessness. A new colony is projected with a special reference to their relief; and pious foreigners, suffering persecution from Papal governments, are invited to share in the

benefit. The two Wesleys, impressed with the supreme importance of spiritual religion, But still "carnal and sold under sin," their consciences sorely lacerated by their daily failures, meet with these devout strangers, who teach them the all-important doctrine of present salvation from sin by faith in Christ crucified; the truth of which becomes to them matter of personal experience. They are thus qualified for the work that is assigned them in the divine purpose, and

34

are a means of promoting a revival of religion, the benefits of which are at this day felt in all evangelical churches throughout the world.

"Behold, how great a matter a little fire kindleth!" "Whoso is wise, and will observe these things, even they shall understand the loving-kindness of the Lord."

This is not the proper place for any extended details respecting Oglethorpe. It will appear, from the Journal of Mr. Charles Wesley, that this great and generous man had the weakness, for a short time, to yield to the influence of some females of doubtful character, and to listen to the tales of parasites, so as to treat his secretary with a harshness which was nearly fatal to his life. But his unworthy treatment of one who was every way entitled to his confidence and affection was of short continuance, and was succeeded by substantial

and permanent kindness. Oglethorpe, who was afterwards raised to the rank of a General, having achieved the establishment of the colony, and defended it against a formidable attack which was made upon it by the Spaniards, returned to England, where he lived to a very protracted period, perhaps as much respected as any man of his age. He was intelligent, frank, and gentlemanly in his demeanour, and enjoyed the friendship of statesmen, and of the first literary characters of the times. Dr. Johnson proposed to write his Life, if the General would supply the requisite facts; and Burke said, that "he looked upon him as a more extraordinary person than any he had ever read of; for he had founded the province of Georgia; had absolutely called it into existence; and had lived to see it severed from the empire which created it, and become an independent state." Oglethorpe was a subscriber to the concerts of the musical sons of Charles Wesley, which were held in their father's house in London; so that he and his former secretary, in all probability, had frequent interviews when they were both very aged men. General Oglethorpe died of fever at his seat at Cranham, June 30th, 1785. The following epitaph is inscribed upon white marble, in the chancel of Cranham church. It was written by Capel Lofft, and is far longer than such compositions usually are: -

"Near this place lie the remains of James Edward Oglethorpe, Esq., who served under Prince Eugene, and, in 1714, was Captain Lieutenant in the first troop of the Queen's Guards. In 1740 he was appointed Colonel of a Regiment to be raised in Georgia. In 1745 he

35

was appointed Major-General, and in 1747 Lieutenant-General, and in 1760 General, of His Majesty's forces. In his civil station he was equally conspicuous. He was chosen Member of Parliament for Haslemere, in Surrey, in 1722, and continued to represent it till 1754. In the Committee of Parliament for inquiring into the state of the jails, formed 25th of February, 1728, and of which he was Chairman, the active and persevering zeal of his benevolence found a truly suitable employment, by visiting, with his colleagues of that generous body, the dark and pestilential dungeons of the prisons which at that time dishonoured the metropolis; detecting the most enormous oppressions, obtaining exemplary punishment on those who had been guilty of such outrage against humanity and justice, and redressing multitudes from extreme misery to light and freedom. Of these, about eleven hundred, rendered, by long confinement for debt, strangers and helpless in the country of their birth, and desirous of seeking an asylum in the wilds of America, were by him conducted thither in

1732. He willingly encountered, in their behalf, a variety of fatigue and danger; and thus became the founder of the colony of Georgia; a colony which afterwards set the noble example of prohibiting the importation of slaves. This new establishment he strenuously and successfully defended against a powerful attack of the Spaniards. In the year in which he quitted England to found this settlement, he nobly strove to secure our true national defence by sea and land, - a free navy, without impressing, - a constitutional militia. But his social affections were more enlarged than even the term patriotism can express: he was the friend of the oppressed Negro; no part of the globe was too remote, no interest too unconnected, or too much opposed to his own, to prevent the immediate succour of suffering humanity. For such qualities he received, from the ever-memorable John Duke of Argyle, a full testimony, in the British Senate, to his military character, his natural generosity, his contempt of danger, and regard for the public. A similar encomium is perpetuated in a foreign language; and, by one of our most celebrated poets, his remembrance is transmitted to posterity in lines justly expressive of the purity, the ardour, and the extent of his benevolence. He lived till the 1st of July, 1785; a venerable instance of what a duration a life of temperance and

virtuous labour is capable of being protracted. His widow, Elizabeth,

36

daughter of Sir Nathan Wright, of Cranham Hall, Bart., and only sister of Sir Samuel Wright, of the same place, surviving, with regret, but

with due submission to divine Providence, an affectionate husband,

after an union of more than forty years, hath inscribed to his memory

these faint traces of his excellent character.

Religion watches o'er his urn,

And all the Virtues bending mourn:

Humanity, with languid eye,

Melting for others' misery;

Prudence, whose hands a measure hold,

And Temperance, with a chain of gold

Fidelity's triumphant vest,

And Fortitude, in armour dress'd;

Wisdom's grey locks, and Freedom, join

The moral train to bless his shrine;

And pensive all, around his ashes holy,

Their last sad honours pay in order melancholy.”

Such was the man who drew the Wesleys from an ascetic and

retired state of life, in which they intended to spend their days, into a

course of active service for the good of mankind, and whose name is therefore associated with theirs in the imperishable records of the church.

IV.

FEW brief observations concerning the contents of the ensuing volumes must suffice, considering the unexpected length to which this introduction has been extended.

The Journal of Mr. Charles Wesley, which is placed the first in order, contains an artless but spirited account of his labours and sufferings in Georgia, accompanied by many interesting notices respecting the colony; his return to England, as the bearer of dispatches from the Governor, with a description of some singular characters that came under his observation during the voyage; the manner in which he was led to a practical reception of the doctrine of present salvation from sin by faith in the Lord Jesus. From this time, it will be found that his character was entirely changed. He was no

37

longer the anxious, perplexed, and disappointed inquirer after peace and holiness; wishing to die, because, while he earnestly sought these blessings, he found them not; supposing that a joyous certainty of acceptance with God, and of conformity to His will, is unattainable in

this life. Instead of singing, in a tone of pensiveness and despair, as he had formerly done,

"Doubtful and insecure of bliss,

Since Death alone confirms me His,"

he now possessed the inward and abiding witness of his personal adoption, and exclaimed, with holy thankfulness,

"No condemnation now I dread,

Jesus, and all in Him, is mine!

Alive in Him, my living Head,

And clothed in righteousness divine,

Bold I approach the' eternal throne,

And claim the crown through Christ my own."

Instead of being "carnal, and sold under sin," he felt that, "to be spiritually minded is life and peace." This great salvation from the

guilt, the misery, and the power of sin, the faith by which it is

obtained, the penitence by which it is preceded, and the practical

holiness which is invariably consequent upon it, formed the chief

subjects of his effective ministry, which ended only with his life.

His laborious zeal and his success, as an Itinerant Evangelist,

which may be gathered from the subsequent parts of his Journal, have

seldom been equalled, and perhaps in no instance surpassed, at least

since the apostolic times. They place him on a level with his honoured brother, and their common friend Mr. Whitefield. In London, Bristol, Bath, Birmingham, Nottingham, Sheffield, Leeds, Manchester, Newcastle, Wales, - among the miners of Cornwall, Kingswood, Staffordshire, Yorkshire, and the north, - among the Romanists of Dublin, and of the south and west of Ireland, - his labours were abundant, his persecutions and privations severe, and his success was most encouraging. Many of the Wesleyan societies in those places were formed by him at the hazard of his life; and his Journal, with that of his brother, will supply ample materials for a history of Methodism, which is greatly needed, and which it is hoped some person of

38

competent abilities and leisure will at no distant period undertake. There is one subject of painful interest in the Journal, upon which it is requisite to offer a remark, - the separation of the two Wesleys from the Moravian Brethren, to whom they were both indebted, under God, for correct views concerning the nature and method of salvation, and therefore for their religious enjoyments. It cannot be denied that some persons of leading influence among the Moravians, then in England, held and propagated grievous errors respecting the

ordinances of religion, by means of which not a few persons lost the fervent piety by which they had been distinguished. The abettors of these errors the Wesleys felt it their duty, in all faithfulness, to withstand, and to warn their children in the Lord against them. On this subject the testimonies of the brothers are in perfect agreement. It is, however, due to the Moravian body to state, that the men who propagated these errors departed from the recognised creed of the Church to which they belonged; so that the Church should not be held responsible for their peculiar tenets; except in this, that the offending parties were silently tolerated, and not subjected to the rebuke and correction which they merited, and which every church is bound to administer in cases of this kind. The doctrine of the Moravian Church, in respect of Christian ordinances, as it is expounded by Spangenberg and La Trobe, does not appear at all to differ from the doctrine of other Protestant communities; so that the "stillness" which Molther and some of his associates inculcated, and which consisted in abstinence from prayer, from reading the Scriptures, and from attending the public preaching of the Gospel, was not less opposed to the tenets of their own Church, than it was to the judgment of the Wesleys. The evils which resulted from it were great; so that strong

and decisive measures in opposition to it were indispensable.

The Correspondence of Mr. Charles Wesley, which immediately follows the Journal, consists mostly of letters which were addressed to his wife in Bristol, when he was fulfilling his ministerial duties in London. These artless epistles, which were written without the slightest apprehension that they would ever be published, and which express the undisguised sentiments of his heart, are conceived to be of inestimable value. To a great extent they supply the deficiencies of the Journal; for they record the writer's feelings and labours when the

39

Journal was discontinued. They prove that when he had become the head of a family, and ceased to travel through England and Ireland as

he had formerly done, his zeal still burned with an ardent and steady flame; conversions under his word were numerous; he freely sacrificed the pleasures of domestic life for considerable periods of time, when the necessities of the people required his absence from home; the unction of God still rested upon him; and the effusions of divine influence which came upon him and his congregations, especially when they were engaged in their sacramental services, were powerful, frequent, and refreshing; so that the people knew not how to separate. The Pastor entered fully into the spirit of devotion, so

as to have power with God; the communicants sympathized with him in his pleading importunity; and all felt that "the effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much." Of these seasons of special visitation and blessing, Mrs. Wesley was often apprized by her absent lord.

These domestic letters bespeak the hand and heart of the husband and of the father, and convey a favourable impression of the writer in both these sacred relations. They manifest his uninterrupted concern for the health and comfort of his wife, and above all for her spiritual welfare. His pious inquiries concerning her religious progress, the encouragements which he suggests to stimulate her faith, his kind and delicate promptings of her to prayer, and especially secret prayer, his tender questionings respecting his infant children, and his suggestions concerning the Christian management of them as their mental faculties expanded, are honourable to him, and contain many lessons of great practical importance to all who sustain the same relations. His wife and children he regarded as a trust committed to him by God; and he was anxious to resign his trust with acceptance and joy.

His letters also show, in an incidental manner, something of the

esteem and affection with which he was regarded by an extensive circle of intelligent Christians, among whom were several of the most eminent Ministers of the age, especially the evangelical Clergy; such as Venn of Clapham, Romaine of St. Ann's, Jones of Southwark, and Madan of the Lock chapel, before he had ruined his reputation and usefulness by his speculations on polygamy.

40

The selections from the author's poetry, which follow next in order, reflect great honour upon his genius. Notwithstanding the sameness of the subjects which they embrace, and the occasions upon which they were written, they present a beautiful variety both of sentiment and expression. They exhibit, with no less distinctness, the tenderness and piety of his personal friendships, and the spirit of the people whose characters were formed under his ministry and that of his fellow-labourers. Happy the men whose preaching was followed by such results! who saw among their own spiritual children persons who adorned the doctrine of God our Saviour, by their spirit and deportment, in all the relations of social and domestic life, and then passed to the companionship of angels and of glorified saints with the very language of heaven upon their lips.

Some of these poetical compositions were never before printed; and the rest have been hitherto known by only a very limited number of readers; most of them having been out of print more than half a century, and others of them for twice that period. They show how the Methodist Christians, who were in religious fellowship with the Wesleys, lived and died a century ago. In the beautiful and expressive lines of the venerable Charles Wesley, these devout people still speak, reminding the members of the living church of their high privilege and calling, and beckoning them to the heaven which is provided for them. The second series of poetical selections mostly refer to facts which are recorded in the Journal and Correspondence, and therefore serve to illustrate the author's personal history. They express, in his own inimitable manner, the spirit of faith, of patience, and of holy zeal, in which he laboured and suffered as a Christian Evangelist and Pastor, who was intrusted with the Gospel message and the care of souls.

The Editor of these volumes cherishes a feeling of lively satisfaction in sending them forth into the world, persuaded as he is of their tendency to promote true spiritual religion; "righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost." They exhibit the power of

evangelical truth, and the signs which follow, when it is preached by men of faith and prayer. Why should not conversions be as numerous in the congregations of the present age, as they were in the days of the

41

Wesleys? Gospel truth is the same; the mercy and power of Christ have suffered no diminution; the grace of the Holy Spirit is as

omnipotent as it ever was; the ordinances of day and night shall cease sooner than the word of the living God shall fail; the gracious covenant of God still remains in force, so that fervent and believing prayer is as prevalent as it was even in the apostolic times. O for a return of those days when in every religious assembly the power of the Lord was signally present, to wound the consciences of the impenitent, to heal the broken in heart, to comfort and sanctify those who had through grace believed! Let all who are interested in the cause of Christianity remember, that the irrevocable word which secures the future enlargement of the church has passed the lips of Him who cannot lie.

Faith, mighty faith the promise sees,

And looks to that alone,

Laughs at impossibilities,

And cries IT SHALL BE DONE!"

THOMAS JACKSON.

RICHMOND, March 7th, 1849.

42

The Journal of Charles Wesley

March 9 - August 30, 1736

TUESDAY, March 9th, 1736, about three in the afternoon, I first set foot on St. Simon's island, and immediately my spirit revived. No sooner did I enter upon my ministry, than God gave me, like Saul, another heart. So true in that [remark] of Bishop Hall: "The calling of God never leaves a man unchanged; neither did God ever employ any one in His service, whom He did not enable to the work He set him; especially those whom He raises up to the supply of His place, and the representation of Himself." The people, with Mr. Oglethorpe, all arrived the day before.

The first who saluted me on my landing was honest Mr. Ingham, with his usual heartiness. Never did I more rejoice at the sight of him; especially when he told me the treatment he had met with, for vindicating the Lord's day: such as every Minister of Christ must meet with. The people seemed overjoyed to see me: Mr. Oglethorpe in particular received me very kindly.

I spent the afternoon in the conference with my parishioners. (With

what trembling ought I to call them mine!) At seven we had evening prayers, in the open air, at which Mr. Oglethorpe was present. The lesson gave me the fullest direction, and greatest encouragement: "Continue instant in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving; with praying also for us, that God would open unto us a door of utterance, to speak the mystery of Christ; that I may make it manifest, as I ought to speak. Walk in wisdom toward them that are without, redeeming the time. Let your speech be always with grace, seasoned with salt, that ye may know how ye ought to answer every man." "Say to Archippus, Take heed to the ministry which thou hast received of the Lord, that thou fulfil it." (Col. 4:2-6, 17.) At nine I returned, and lay in the boat.

Wed., March 10th. Between five and six in the morning I read short prayers to a few at the fire, before Mr. Oglethorpe's tent, in a hard shower of rain. Mr. Oglethorpe had set up a tent for the women, near his own. Toward noon I found an opportunity of talking at the tent-door with Mrs. W. I laboured to guard her against the cares of the

43

world, and to give herself to God in the Christian sacrifice; but to no purpose. God was pleased not to add weight to my words; therefore they could make no impression.

After dinner I began talking with M. Germain, about baptizing her child by immersion. She was much averse to it, though she owned it a strong, healthy child. I then spoke to her husband, who was soon satisfied, and brought his wife to be so too.

In the evening I endeavoured to reconcile M.W. to M.H., who, I assured her, bore her no ill-will. She replied, "You must not tell me that. M.H. is a very subtle woman. I understand her perfectly. There is a great man in the case; therefore I cannot speak; only that she is exceeding jealous of me." Company stopped her saying more.

Thur., March 11th. At ten this morning I began the full service, to about a dozen women, whom I had got together; intending to continue it, and only to read a few prayers to the men before they went to work. I also, expounded the second lesson with some boldness, as I had a few times before.

After prayers I met M.H.'s maid, in a great passion of tears, at being struck by her mistress. She seemed resolved to make away with herself, to escape her Egyptian bondage. With much difficulty I prevailed upon her to return, and carried her back to her mistress.

Upon my asking M.H. to forgive her, she refused me with the utmost roughness, rage, and almost reviling.

Mr. Tacknet, whom I talked with next, made me full amends. He was in

an excellent temper; resolved to strive, not with his wife, but himself, in putting off the old man, and putting on the new.

In the evening I heard the first harsh word from Mr. Oglethorpe, when I asked for something for a poor woman. The next day I was surprised by a rougher answer, in a matter that deserved still greater encouragement. I know not how to account for his increasing coldness.

My encouragement was the same in speaking with M.W., whom I found all storm and tempest. The meek, the teachable M.W. (that was in the ship) was now so wilful, so untractable, so fierce, that I could

44

not bear to stay near her. I did not mend myself by stumbling again upon Mr. Oglethorpe, who was with the men under arms, in

expectation of an enemy. I stayed as long as I could, however, "Unsafe within the wind Of such commotion:" but at last the hurricane of his passion drove me away.

Sun., March 14th. We had prayers under a great tree. In the Epistle I was plainly shown what I ought to be, and what to expect. "Giving no offence in anything, that the ministry be not blamed: but in all things approving ourselves as the Ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses, in stripes, in imprisonments, in

tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings; by purity by knowledge, by longsuffering, by kindness, by the Holy Ghost, by love unfailing, by the word of truth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteousness on the right hand and on the left, by honour and dishonour, by evil report and good report: as deceivers, and yet true; as unknown, and yet well known; as dying, and, behold, we live; as chastened, and not killed; as sorrowful, yet always rejoicing; as poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, and yet possessing all things." (2 Cor. 6:8-10.)

I preached with boldness, on singleness of intention, to about twenty people, among whom was Mr. Oglethorpe. Soon after, as he was in M.H.'s hut, a bullet (through the carelessness of one of the people, who were exercising today) flew through the wall, close by him. M. Germain now retracted her consent for having her child baptized: however, M. Colwell's I did baptize by true immersion, before a numerous congregation.

At night I found myself exceedingly faint, but had no better bed to go to than the ground; on which I slept very comfortably, before a great fire, and woke up the next morning perfectly well.

Tues., March 16th. I was wholly spent in writing letters for Mr.

Oglethorpe. I would not spend six days more in the same manner for all Georgia.

Wed., March 17th. I found an opportunity to tell M.W. the reason why I had not talked to her lately which was, my despair of doing her any good. She acknowledged herself entirely changed, but could never tell

45

me the cause. I immediately guessed it, and mentioned my conjecture.

She confessed the truth of it. My soul was filled with pity; and I prayed God the sin of others might not ruin her.

Thur., March 18th. Today Mr. Oglethorpe set out with the Indians, to hunt the buffalo upon the main, and to see the utmost limits of what they claimed. In the afternoon M.W. discovered to me the whole mystery of iniquity.

I went to my myrtle-walk, where, as I was repeating, "I will thank thee, for thou hast heard me, and art become my salvation," a gun was fired from the other side of the hushes. Providence had that moment turned me from that end of the walk, which the shot flew through; but I heard them pass close by me.

Sun., March 21st. Mr. Oglethorpe had ordered, more often than once, that no man should shoot on a Sunday. Germain had been committed

to the guard-room for it in the morning, but was, upon his submission, released. In the midst of the sermon a gun was fired. Davison, the constable, ran out, and found it was the Doctor; told him it was contrary to orders, and he was obliged to desire him to come to the officer. Upon this the Doctor flew into a great passion, and said, "What, do you not know that I am not to be looked upon as a common fellow?" Not knowing what to do, the constable went, and returned, after consulting with Hermsdorf, with two sentinels, and brought him to the guard-room. Hereupon M.H. charged and fired a gun; and then ran thither, like a mad woman, crying she had shot, and would be confined too. The constable and Hermsdorf persuaded her to go away. She cursed and swore in the utmost transport of passion, threatening to kill the first man that should come near her. Alas, my brother! what has become of thy hopeful convert

In the afternoon, while I was talking in the street with poor Catherine, her mistress came up to us, and fell upon me with the utmost bitterness and scurrility; saying she would blow me up, and my brother, whom she once thought honest, but was now undeceived: that I was the cause of her husband's confinement; but she would be revenged, and expose my hypocrisy, my prayers four times a day, by beat of drum, and abundance more, which I cannot write, and thought

no woman, though taken from Drurylane, could have spoken. I only said, I pitied her, but defied all she or the devil could do; for she could

not hurt me. I was strangely preserved from passion, and at parting told her that, I hoped she would soon come to a better mind.

In the evening hour of retirement I resigned myself to God, in my brother's prayer for conformity to a suffering Saviour.

Faint and weary with the day's fatigue, I found my want of true holiness, and begged God to give me comfort from his word. I then read, in the evening lesson, "But thou, O man of God, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness. Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses." (1 Tim. 6:11, 12.) Before prayers I took a walk with Mr. Ingham, who was surprised I should not think innocence a sufficient protection. I had not indeed acquainted him with what M.W. had told me. At night I was forced to exchange my usual bed, the ground, for a chest, being almost speechless through a violent cold.

Tues., March 23rd. In reading Hebrews 11, I felt my faith revive; and I was confident God would either turn aside the trial, or strengthen me

to bear it. In the afternoon Mr. Davison informed me that, the Doctor had sent his wife a word to arm herself from the case of instruments, and forcibly make her escape; to speak to Mr. Oglethorpe first, and even to stab any that should oppose her. M. Perkins told me, she had heard M.H. say, "Mr. Oglethorpe dares not punish me." I was encouraged by the lesson: "God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind. Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the Gospel according to the power of God." "Whereunto I am an appointed Preacher. For which cause I also suffer these things: nevertheless I am not ashamed: for I know whom I have believed, and am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day." (2 Tim. 1:7, 8, 11, 12.)

Wed., March 24th. I was enabled to pray earnestly for my enemies, particularly Mr. Oglethorpe, whom I now looked upon as the chief of

47

them. Then I gave myself up entirely to God's disposal, desiring I might not now want power to pray, when I most of all needed it. Mr.

Ingham then came, and read the thirty-seventh psalm: a glorious exhortation to patience, and confidence in God, from the different estate of the good and wicked. After breakfast I again betook myself to

intercession, particularly for M.W., that Satan, in the shape of that other bad woman, might not stand at her right hand. Doubting whether I should not interpose for the prisoners, I consulted the oracle, and met Jer. 44:16, 17: "As for the word which thou hast spoken to us in the name of the Lord, we will not hearken unto it: but we will certainly do whatsoever thing goeth forth out of our own mouth." This determined me not to meddle with them at all.

At eleven, I met M. Perkins, who told me of the infamy M.H. had brought on Mr. Oglethorpe, and the utter discouragement it would be to the people, if she was supported. Farther she informed me that M.W. had began to repent of having engaged so far with her, confessing she had done it through cowardice, as thinking Mr. Oglethorpe would bear her out against all the world.

Soon after I talked with M.W., and with the last degree of astonishment heard her accuse herself. Horror of horrors! Never did I feel such excess of pity. I gave myself up to prayer for her. Mr. Ingham soon joined me. All the prayers expressed a full confidence in God: when notice was given to us of Mr. Oglethorpe's landing. M.H., Mr. Ingham, and myself were sent for. We found him in his tent, with the people round it; Mr. and M.H. within. After a short hearing, the

officers were reprimanded, and the prisoners dismissed. At going out M.H. modestly told me, she had something more to say against me, but would take another time. I only answered, " You know, Madam, it is impossible for me to fear you." When they were gone, Mr. Oglethorpe said he was convinced, and glad I had had no hand in all this. I told him I had something to impart, of the last importance, when he was at leisure. He took no notice, but read his letters; and I walked away with Mr. Ingham, who was utterly astonished. The issue is just what I expected.

I was struck with those words in the evening lesson: "Thou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus." "Endure

48

hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ." "Remember that Jesus Christ was raised from the dead according to my Gospel: wherein I

suffer trouble, as an evil-doer, even unto bonds; but the word of God is not bound. Therefore I endure all things for the elect's sakes, that they may also obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus with eternal

glory. It is a faithful saying: For if we be dead with him, we shall also

live with him: if we suffer, we shall also reign with him." (2 Tim. 2:1, 3, 8-12.) After reading I could not forbear adding, "I need say nothing.

God will shortly apply this."

Glory be to God for my confidence hitherto! O what am I if left to myself? but I can do and suffer all things through Christ strengthening me.

Thur., March 25th. At five I heard the second drum beat for prayer, which I had desired Mr. Ingham to read, being much weakened by my fever. But considering I ought to appear at this time especially, I rose and heard those animating words: "If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will my Father honour. Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say Father, save me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour. Father, glorify thy name." (John 12:26-28.)

At half-hour past seven Mr. Oglethorpe called me out of my hut. I looked up to God, and went. He charged me with mutiny and sedition; with stirring up the people to desert the colony. Accordingly he said they had had a meeting last night, and sent a message to him this morning, desiring leave to go; that their speaker had informed against them, and me the spring of all; that men constantly came to prayers, therefore I must have instigated them; that he should not scruple shooting half-a-dozen of them at once; but that he had, out of kindness, first spoken to me. My answer was, "I desire, Sir, you would

have no regard to my brothers, my friends, or the love you had for me, if anything of this is made out against me. I know nothing of their meeting or designs. Of those you have mentioned, not one comes constantly to prayers, or sacrament. I never incited any one to leave the colony. I desire to answer my accuser face to face." He told me, my accuser was Mr. Lawley, whom he would bring, if I would wait here. I added, " Mr. Lawley is a man who has declared he knows no reason for

49

keeping fair with any man, but a design to get all he can by him: but there was nothing to be got by the poor Persons." I asked whether he

himself was not assured that there were enough men in Frederica, to say or swear anything against any man that should be in disgrace:

whether; if he himself was removed, or succeeded ill, the whole

stream of the people would not be turned against him; and even this

Lawley, who was of all others the most violent in condemning the

prisoners, and justifying the officers. I observed, this was the old cry,

"Away with the Christians to the lions;" mentioned H. and his wife's scandalizing my brother and me, and vowing revenge against us both,

threatening me yesterday even in his presence. I asked what redress

or satisfaction was due to my character; what good I could do in my

present parish, if cut off by their calumnies from ever seeing one half

of it. I ended with assuring him, I had and should still make it my business to promote peace among all. I felt no disturbance while speaking, but lifted up my heart to God, and found him present with me. While Mr. Oglethorpe was fetching Lawley, I thought of our Lord's words, "Ye shall be brought before Governors and Kings for my sake. But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak;" (Matt. 10:18, 19;) and applied to Him for help, and words to make my defence. Before Mr. Oglethorpe returned I called in upon Mr. Ingham, and desired him to pray for me: then walked, and, musing on the event, opened the book on Acts 15:31-83: "Which when they had read, they rejoiced for the consolation; and exhorted the brethren with many words, and confirmed them. And after they had tarried there a space, they were let go in peace." Mr. Ingham coming, I related all that had passed. On sight of Mr. Oglethorpe and Lawley, he retired. Mr. Oglethorpe observed, the place was too public. I offered to carry him to my usual walk in the woods. On our way God put it into my heart to say, "Show only the least disinclination to find me guilty, and you shall see what a turn it will give to the accusation." He took the hint, and instead of calling upon Lawley to make good his charge,

began with the quarrel in general; but did not show himself angry with me, or desirous to find me to blame. Lawley, who appeared full of guilt and fear, upon this dropped his accusation, or shrunk it into my "forcing the people to prayers." I replied, that the people themselves 50 would acquit me of that; and as to the officers' quarrel, I appealed to the officers for the truth of my assertion, that I had had no hand at all in it; professed my desire and resolution of promoting peace and obedience: and as to the people, I was persuaded their desire of leaving the colony arose from mistake, not malice. Here Mr. Oglethorpe spoke of reconciling matters; bade Lawley told the petitioners, he would not so much ask who they were, if they were but quiet for the future. "I hope," added he, "they will be so; and Mr. Wesley here hopes so too." "Yes, Sir," says Lawley, "I really believe it of Mr. Wesley, and had always a very great respect for him." I turned, and said to Mr. Oglethorpe, "Did not I tell you it would be so?" He replied to Lawley, "Yes; you had always a very great respect for Mr. Wesley. You told me he was a stirrer up of sedition, and at the bottom of all this disturbance." With this gentle reproof he dismissed him; and I thanked him for having first spoken to me of what I was accused of, begging he would always do so. This he promised, and then I walked with him to M.H.'s door. She came out again to see me with him. He

then left me, "and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion."

I went to my hut, where I found Mr. Ingham. He told me this was but the beginning of sorrows. "Not as I will, but as Thou wilt." About noon, in the midst of a violent storm of thunder and lightning, I read the eighteenth Psalm, and found it gloriously suited to my circumstances.

I never felt the Scriptures as now. Now I need them, I find them all written for my instruction and comfort. At the same time I feel great joy in the expectation of our Saviour thus coming to judgment, when the secrets of all hearts shall be revealed, and God shall make my innocency as clear as the light, and my just dealing as the noon-day. At three I walked with Mr. Ingham, and read him the history of this amazing day. We rejoiced together in the protection of God, and through comfort of the Scriptures.

The evening lesson was full of encouragement. "This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come. For men shall be false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, traitors, heady, high-minded, but they shall proceed no further: for their folly shall be made manifest unto all men. But thou hast fully known my doctrine, manner of life, what persecutions I endured; but out of them

all the Lord delivered me. Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.

But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived. All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness." (2 Tim. 3:1-4, 9-13, 16.) Blessed be God, I begin to find it so!

Meeting with Mr. Hird, I persuaded him to use all his interest with the people, to lay aside all thoughts of leaving the colony. He told me he had assured Mr. Oglethorpe that this was always my language toward him and the rest; but was answered short, with, "You must not tell me that; I know better."

After spending an hour at the camp, in singing such Psalms as suited the occasion, I went to bed in the hut, which was thoroughly wet with the day's rain.

Fri., March 26th. "My soul is always in my hand; therefore will I not forget thy law." This morning, early, Mr. Oglethorpe called me out to tell me of Mrs. Lawley's miscarriage, by being denied access to the Doctor for bleeding. He seemed very angry, and to charge me with it; saying he should be the tyrant if he passed by such intolerable injuries. I answered, I knew nothing of the matter, and it was hard it

should be imputed to me; that from the first Hermsdorf told the Doctor he might visit whom of his patients he pleased; but the Doctor would not. I denied my having the least hand in the whole business as Hermsdorf himself had declared. He said, "Hermsdorf himself assured me, what he did, he did by your advice." I answered, "You must mistake his imperfect English; for many have heard him say the contradictory of this. Yet I must be charged with all the mischief."

"How else can it be," said he, "that there should be no love, no meekness, no true religion among the people, but instead of that, mere formal prayers?" "As to that, I can answer for them, that they have no more of the form of godliness than the power. I have seldom above six at the public service." "But what would an unbeliever say to your raising these disorders?" "Why, if I had raised them, he might say there was nothing in religion; but what would that signify to those

52

who had experienced it? They would not say so." He told me the people were full of dread and confusion; that it was much easier to govern a thousand than sixty men; for in so small a number, every one's passion was considerable; that he does not leave them before they were settled, & I asked him, "Would you have me forbear conferring at all with my parishioners?" To this I could get no answer, and went on: "The reason why I did not interpose for or against the

Doctor was his having, at the beginning, charged me with his confinement. I talked less with my parishioners these five days past, than I had done in any one afternoon before. I shunned appearing in public, lest my advice should be asked, or lest, if I heard others talking, my very silence should be deciphered into advice. But one argument of my innocence I can give, which will even convince you of it. I know my life is in your hands: and you know, that was you to frown upon me, and give the least intimation that it would be agreeable to you, the generality of these wretched people would say or swear anything." To this he agreed, and owned the case was so with them all. "You see that my safety depends on your single opinion of me. Must I not therefore be mad, if I would in such a situation provoke you by disturbing the public peace? Innocence, I know, is not the least protection; but my sure trust is in God." His company interrupted us, and I left him.

I was no longer careful of the event, after reading those words in the morning lesson: "Thou cannot follow me now; but thou shalt follow me afterwards." (John 13:36.) Amen. When Thou pleasest. Thy time is the best.

Mr. Oglethorpe, meeting me in the evening, asked when I had prayers. I said, I waited his pleasure. While the people came slowly, "You see,

Sir," said I, "they do not lay too great a stress on forms." "The reason of that is, because others idolize them." "I believe few stay away for that reason." "I don't know that." Mr. Oglethorpe stood over against me, and joined audibly in the prayers. The chapter was designed for me,

and I read it with great boldness, as follows: "I charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at

his appearing and his kingdom; preach the word; be instant in season,

out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long-suffering and

doctrine. For the time will come when they will not endure sound

53

doctrine." "But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an Evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry." "At my first answer no man stood with me, but all men forsook me." "Notwithstanding the

Lord stood with me that by me the preaching might be fully

known, and that all the Gentiles might hear: and I was delivered out of

the mouth of the lion. And the Lord shall deliver me from every evil

work, and will preserve me unto his heavenly kingdom: to whom be

glory for ever and ever. Amen." (2 Tim. 4:1-3, 5, 16-18.)

Sat., March 27th. This morning we began our Lord's last discourses to

his disciples: every word was providentially directed to my comfort,

but particularly those: -"Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in

God, believe also in me." "I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you." "Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid." (John 14:1, 18, 27.)

I was sensibly concerned this afternoon at hearing that M.W. is growing more and more like M.H., declares she will be no longer priest-ridden, jests upon prayers, and talks in the loose, scandalous dialect of her friend. In the evening a thought came into my mind of sending Mr. Ingham for my brother. He was much averse to leaving me in my trials, but was at last persuaded to go.

Sun., March 28th. I went to the storehouse (our tabernacle at present) to hearken what the Lord God would say concerning me. Both myself and the congregation were struck with the first lesson: Joseph and Potiphar's wife. The second was still more animating: "If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own." (John 15:18, 19.) After the prayers poor Mr. Davison stayed behind, to take his leave of Mr. Ingham. He burst into tears, and said, "One good man is leaving us already. I foresee nothing but desolation. Must my poor children be brought up like these savages" We endeavoured to comfort him by showing him his calling. At ten Mr. Ingham preached an alarming sermon on the day of judgment, and joined with me in offering up the Christian sacrifice.

In my walk at noon I was full of heaviness; complained to God that I

had no friend but Him; and even in Him could now find no comfort.

54

Immediately I received power to pray; then, opening my Bible, read as follows: - "Hearken unto me, ye that seek the Lord: look unto the rock

whence ye are hewn." "Fear not the reproach of men, neither be afraid of their revilings." "Who art thou, that thou shouldest be afraid of a man that shall die; and hast feared continually every day because

of the fury of the oppressor - and where is the fury of the oppressor"

(Isai. 51:1, 2, 12, 13.) After reading this, no wonder that I found myself renewed in confidence.

While Mr. Ingham waited for the boat, I took a turn with Mr. Horton.

He fully convinced me of M.H.'s true character; ungrateful in the

highest degree, a common prostitute, a complete hypocrite. She told

me, her and her husband had begged him upon their knees to

intercede with Mr. Oglethorpe, not to turn them out of the ship, which

would be their utter ruin. This he accordingly did; though Mr.

Oglethorpe at first assured him he had rather give one hundred

pounds than take them. The first person she fell upon, after this, was

Mr. Horton himself, whom she abused, as she has since done to me.

From him I hastened to the water-side, where I found Mr. Ingham just

put off. O happy, happy friend! Abiit, erupit, evasit! But woe is me, that

I am still constrained to dwell with Meshech! I languished to hear him company, followed him with my eyes till out of sight and then sunk into deeper dejection than I had known before.

Mon., March 29th. I was revived by those words of our Lord: "These things have I spoken unto you, that you should not be offended. They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service. And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me." "In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world." (John 16:1-3, 33.)

Knowing I was to live with Mr. Oglethorpe, I had brought nothing with me from England, except my clothes and books; but this morning, asking a servant for something I wanted, (I think a tea-kettle,) I was told Mr. Oglethorpe had given orders that no one should use any of his things. I answered, that order, I supposed, did not extend to me. "Yes, Sir," says she, "you were excepted by name." Thanks be to God, that it is not yet made capital to give me a morsel of bread.

55

Tues., March 30th. Having laid hitherto on the ground, in a corner of Mr. Reed's hut, and hearing some boards were to be disposed of, I attempted in vain to get some of them to lie upon. They were given to

all besides. The Minister only of Frederica must be shipwrecked. Yet are we not hereunto called homeless, badly spoken of? Even the Son of man had not where to lay his head!

I find the Scripture an inexhaustible fund of comfort. "Is my hand shortened at all, that it cannot save or have I no power to deliver I gave my back to the smelters, and my cheeks to them that plucked off the hair. I hid not my face from shame and spitting. For the Lord God will help me, therefore shall I not be confounded. Therefore have I set my face like a flint; and I know that I shall not be ashamed. He is near that justifieth me; who will contend with me Let us stand together. Who is mine adversary let him come near to me. Behold, the Lord God will help me: who is he that shall condemn me"

Wed., March 31st. I begin now to be abused and slighted into an opinion of my own considerableness. I could not be more trampled upon, was I a fallen Minister of state. The people have found out that I am in disgrace, and all the cry is, Curramus praecipites, et Dum jacet in ripa calcemus caesaris hostem.

My few well-wishers are afraid to speak to me. Some have turned out of the way to avoid me. Others desired I would not take it ill, if they seemed not to know me when we should meet. The servant that used

to wash my linen sent it back unwashed. It was great cause of triumph my being forbidden the use of Mr. Oglethorpe's things, and in effect debarred of most of the conveniences, if not necessities, of life. I sometimes pitied, and sometimes diverted myself with, the odd expressions of their contempt; but found the benefit of having undergone a much lower degree of obloquy at Oxford.

Thur., April 1st. In the midst of morning service a poor scoutboat-man was brought in, who was almost killed by the burst of a cannon. I found him senseless and dying. All I could do was to pray for him, and try by his example to wake his two companions. He languished till the next day, and died.

Hitherto I have been borne up by a spirit not my own; but exhausted

56

nature at last prevails. It is amazing she held out so long. My outward hardships and inward conflicts, the bitterness of reproach from the only man I wished to please, "At last have borne my boasted courage down."

Accordingly, this afternoon, I was forced by a friendly fever to take my bed. My sickness, I knew, could not be of long continuance; but, as I was in want of every help and convenience, must either shortly leave me, or release me from farther suffering.

In the evening Mrs. Hird and Mrs. Robinson called to see me, and offered me all the assistance in their power. I thanked them, but desired they would not prejudice themselves by taking this notice of me. At that instant we were alarmed with a cry of the Spaniards being come; heard many guns fired, and saw the people fly in great consternation to the Fort. I felt not the least disturbance or surprise; bade the women no to fear, for God was with us. Within a few minutes news was brought us that the alarm was only a contrivance of Mr. Oglethorpe, to try the people. My charitable visitants then left me, and soon returned with some gruel, which threw me into a sweat. The next morning, April 2nd, they ventured to call again. At night, when my fever was somewhat abated, I was led out to bury the scoutboat-man, and envied his quiet grave.

Sat., April 3rd. Nature I found endeavoured to throw off the disease by excessive sweats: I therefore drank whatever my women brought me.

Sun., April 4th. Many of the people had been ill of the bloody flux. I escaped hitherto by my vegetable diet; but now my fever brought it.

Notwithstanding this, I was obliged to go abroad, and preach, and administer the sacrament. My sermon on, "Keep innocency, and take heed to the thing that is right, for this shall bring a man peace at the

last," was deciphered into a satire against M.H. At night I got an old bedstead to lie on, being that on which the scoutboat-man had died. Mon., April 5th. At one this morning the sand flies forced me to rise, and smoke them out of the hut. The whole town was employed in the same manner. My congregation in the evening consisted of two Presbyterians and a Papist. I went home in great pain, my distemper being much increased with the little duty I could discharge.

57

Tues., April 6th. I found myself so faint and weak, that it was with the utmost difficulty I got through the prayers. Mr. Davison, my good Samaritan, would often call, or send his wife to tend me: and to their care, under God, I owe my life.

Today Mr. Oglethorpe gave away my bedstead from under me, and refused to spar one of the carpenters to mend me up another.

Fri., April 9th. While talking to Mrs. Hird, I turned my eyes towards the huts, and saw Mr. Lassel's all in a blaze. I walked towards the fires, which, before I could come up to it, had consumed the hut, and everything in it. It was a corner-hut, and the wind providentially blew from the others, or they would have been all destroyed.

Sat., April 10th. Mr. Reed waked me with news of Mr. Delamotte and my brother being on their way to Frederica. I found the

encouragement I sought in the Scriptures for the day, Psalm 53: "Why boastest thou thyself in mischief, O mighty man the goodness of God endureth continually. Thy tongue deviseth mischiefs; like a sharp razor, working deceitfully. Thou lovest evil more than good; and lying than to speak righteousness."

At six Mr. Delamotte and my brother landed, when my strength was so exhausted I could not have read prayers once more. He helped me into the woods; for there was no talking among a people of spies and ruffians; nor even in the woods, unless in an unknown tongue. He told me the scripture he met with at landing was, "If God be for us, who can be against us" and that Mr. Oglethorpe received him with abundant kindness. I began my account of all that has passed, and continued it till prayers. It were endless to mention all the scriptures which have been for so many days adapted to my circumstances; but I cannot pass by the evening lesson, Heb. 11. I was ashamed of having well-nigh sunk under mine, when I beheld the conflicts of those triumphant sufferers, of whom the world was not worthy.

Sun., April 11th. What words could more support our confidence, than the following, out of the Psalms for the day - "Be merciful unto me, O God, for man goeth about to devour me. He is daily fighting, and

troubling me. Mine enemies are daily in hand to swallow me up; for they be many that fight against me, O thou Most Highest. Nevertheless,

58

though I am sometimes afraid, yet put I my trust in thee. I will put my trust in God, and will not fear what man can do unto me. They daily

mistake my words: all that they imagine is to do me evil." (Psalm

56:1.) The next Psalm was equally animating:- "Be merciful unto me, O

God; for my soul trusteth in thee: and under the shadow of thy wings

shall be my refuge, until this tyranny be overpast. I will call upon the

most high God; even unto the God that shall perform the cause which I

have in hand. He shall send down from heaven, and save me from the

reproof of him that would eat me up. God shall send forth his mercy

and truth; my soul is among lions. And I lie even among the children of

men, that are set on fire: whose teeth are spears and arrows, and their

tongue a sharp sword. Set up thyself, O God, above the heavens; and

thy glory above all the earth." (Psalm 57:1-6.)

I had just recovered strength enough to consecrate at the sacrament:

the rest my brother discharged. We then got out of the reach of

informers, and proceeded in my account; being fully persuaded of the

truth of M.W.'s information against Mr. Oglethorpe, M.H., and herself.

Next morning Mr. Oglethorpe met and carried us to breakfast at the

modest M.H.,s. At noon my brother repeated to me his last conference with M.W., in confirmation of all she had ever told me.

At night I took leave of Mr. Horton, Mr. Hermsdorf, and Major Richards, who were going, with thirty men, to build a fort over against the Spanish look-out, twelve leagues from Augustine.

Wed., April 14th. By a relation which my brother gave me of a late conference he had with her, I was, in spite of all I had seen and heard, half persuaded into a good opinion of M.H. For the lasting honour of our sagacity be it written!

Fri., April 16th. My brother brought me of a resolution which honour and indignation had formed, of starving rather than asking for necessaries. Accordingly I went to Mr. Oglethorpe, in his tent, to ask for some little things I wanted. He sent for me back again, and said, "Pray, Sir, sit down. I have something to say to you. I hear you have spread several reports about."

The next day my brother and Mr. Delamotte set out in an open boat for

59

Savannah. I preached in the afternoon on, "He that now goeth on his way weeping, and beareth forth good seed, shall doubtless come again with joy, and bring his sheaves with him."

Easter-eve, April 24th. At ten I was sent for by Mr. Oglethorpe. He

began, "Mr. Wesley, you know what has passed between us. I took some pains to satisfy your brother about the reports concerning me, but in vain. He hereby renews his suspicions in writing. I did desire to convince him, because I had an esteem for him; and he is just so considerable to me as my esteem makes him. I could clear up all, but it matters not. You will soon see the reason of my actions.

"I am now going to death. You will see me no more. Take this ring, and carry it from me to Mr. V. If there is a friend to be depended upon, he is one. His interest is next to Sir Robert's. Whatever you ask, within his power, he will do for you, your brother, and your family. I have expected death for some days. These letters show that the Spaniards have long been seducing our allies, and intend to cut us off at a blow. I fall by my friends, Gascoin, whom I have made; the Carolina people, whom I depended upon to send their promised succours. But death is to me nothing. T. will pursue all my designs; and to him I recommend them and you."

He then gave me a diamond ring: I took it, and said, "If, as I believe, *Postremum fato, quod te alloquor, hoc est*, hear what you will quickly know to be true, as soon as you enter upon the separate state. This ring I shall never make any use of for myself. I have no worldly hopes.

I have renounced the world. Life is bitterness to me. I came hither to lay it down.

"You have been deceived, as well as I. I protest my innocence of the crimes I am charged with; and take myself to be now at liberty to tell you what I thought never to have uttered."

When I had finished this relation he seemed entirely changed, full of his old love and confidence in me. After some expressions of kindness,

I asked him, "Are you satisfied" He replied, "Yes, entirely." "Why then; Sir, I desire nothing more upon earth; and care not how soon I follow

you." He added, he much desired the conversion of the Heathen, and believed my brother intended for it. "But I believe," said I, "it will 60

never be under your patronage; for then men would account for it without taking in God." He replied, "I believe so too:" then embraced and kissed me with the most cordial affection. I attended him to the

scout-boat, where he waited some minutes for his sword. They

brought him first, and a second time, a mourning sword. At last they

gave him his own, which had been his father's. "With this sword," says he, "I was never yet unsuccessful." "I hope, Sir," said I, "you carry with you a better, even the sword of the Lord, and of Gideon." "I hope so too," he added.

When the boat put off; I ran before into the woods, to see my last of him. Seeing me and two others running after him, he stopped the boat, and asked whether we wanted anything. Captain Mackintosh, left

Commander, desired his last orders. I then said, "God be with you. Go forth, Christo duce, et auspice Christo!" "You have," says he, "I think, some verses of mine. You therefore see my thoughts of success." His last word to the people was, "God bless you all!" The boat then carried him out of sight. I interceded for him, that God would save him from death, would wash out all his sins, and prepare, before he took, the sacrifice to himself.

Easter-day, April 25th. The people were alarmed at night, by the sight of two great fires, on either side of the town, not knowing if they were made by friends or enemies. Next morning news was brought of a boat coming up. Every one seemed under a consternation, though no one but myself was fully apprized of our dangers. At night the watch was doubled by Captain Mackintosh. The people being unwilling to comply with his orders, I was forced to tell Mr. Hird, the constable, that there might be danger which Mackintosh alone knew of, and therefore they ought to obey. He promised it for himself and the rest. Though I expected every hour that the Spaniards would bring us the news of Mr. Oglethorpe's death, yet I was insensible of fear, and careless of the consequence.

But my indifference arose from stupidity rather than faith. There was nothing I cared for in life, and therefore the loss of it appeared a trifle.

Thur., April 29th. About half-hour past eight I went down to the bluff, to see a boat coming up. At nine it arrived with Mr. Oglethorpe. I

61

blessed God for still holding his soul in life. In the evening we took a walk together, and he informed me more particularly of our past

danger. Three great ships, and four smaller, had been seen for three weeks together at the mouth of the river; but the wind continuing full against them, [they] were kept from making a descent, till they could stay no longer. I gave him back his ring, and said, "I need not, Sir, and indeed I cannot, tell you how joyfully and thankfully I return this."

"When I gave it you," said he, "I never expected to receive it again, but thought it would be of service to your brother and you. I had many omens of my death, particularly their bringing me my mourning sword; but God has been pleased to preserve a life which was never valuable to me; and yet, in the continuance of it, I thank God, I can rejoice." "I am now glad of all that has happened here, since without it I could never have had such a proof of your affection as that you gave me, when you looked upon me as the most ungrateful of villains."

While I was speaking this, he appeared full of tenderness; and passed on to observe the strangeness of his deliverance, when betrayed on all sides, without human support, and utterly defenceless. He condemned himself for his anger, (God forgive those who made me the object of

it!) which he imputed to his want of time for consideration. "I longed, Sir, to see you once more, that I might tell you some things before we finally parted: but then I considered that if you died, you would know them all in a moment." "I know not whether separate spirits regard our little concerns. If they do, it is as men regard the follies of their childhood, or as my late passionateness."

Fri., April 30th. I had some farther talk with him in bed. He ordered me whatever he could think I wanted; promised to have me an house built immediately; and was just the same he had formerly been to me.

Sun., May 2nd. I went to him to ask if there was any truth in the report, that Major Richards and Mr. Horton were detained at Augustine, and the men at St. George's run away. He told me, he hoped that the gentlemen were well received; but the people had been frightened away by two soldiers bringing a civil proffer of refreshment; that thereupon the men mutinied, and obliged Captain Hermsdorf to quit the advanced post, and turn homeward, which he had done pursuant to Ferguson's advice; that he intended immediately to go in quest of

62

them. In an hour's time he set out accordingly.

In the evening I endeavoured to convince Mr. Moore (as I had done

some few besides) of Mr. Oglethorpe's innocence. He then read me a list of the officers that were to be: and who should be appointed head-bailiff, but my dear friend the Doctor

Mon., May 3rd. The people had observed that I was taken into favour again, which I found by their provoking civilities.

Wed., May 5th. At night news was brought of a boat being seen off the point, which would not come to, though the soldiers had fired at her several times. The people were greatly alarmed, being in no preparation for an enemy. I went to bed, but was soon awakened by the firing of a gun; and, rising, found all the town flocking towards the fort, in the utmost consternation. I walked leisurely after them, without fear, yet without faith; found the uproar was occasioned by a friendly Indian; and walked back again.

Sat., May 8th. I had some affecting talk with a poor man, belonging to the scout-boat, who had broke his arm. He owned himself greatly moved by the Christian Monitor I had given him; convinced thereby of the truth of religion; unable to read for tears; and fully resolved to obey the motions of the Holy Spirit, by leading a new life.

Between ten and eleven I was woken up again by an alarm. I rose, as did all the women, and found a signal had been made from the man-

of-war. I sent away the women, and, being myself of equal service, soon followed their example, and went to sleep again.

Sun., May 9th. Notice was given to me that Mr. D., Chaplain to the Independent Company, had landed, and walking toward me. His moral character did not recommend him. I had just time to run away into the woods, and so escaped his visit. The next morning Mr. Oglethorpe returned, from whom I had the following account of his expedition.

On Saturday, May 1st, late at night, arrived the "Caroline" scout-boat, with Captain Ferguson, bringing advice that Major Richards and Mr.

Horton (who had carried answers to the Spanish Governor's letters) had landed at their look-out, and he believed were made prisoners by the Spaniards; for they had heard no more of them, except by a blind

63

letter, written with a pencil; that the boats, in which were the men under Captain Hermsdorf, had come about thirty miles on this side of

St. George's Point, and there waited for orders; that the men were mutinous, and Hermsdorf believed he should be forced to retire to

Fort St. Andrews; that he was apprehensive they would either murder their officers, and turn pirates, or be cut off by the Spaniards. Mr.

Oglethorpe, on Sunday, went on board the man-of-war, and proceeded from thence with the man-of-war's boat, commanded by the

Lieutenant, and the Georgia scout-boat. They arrived that night at Fort St. Andrews. On Monday they came up with the south point of Cumberland, where we met with the boats under the command of Captain Hermsdorf. Mr. Oglethorpe immediately took them out to sea with him, round Amelia Island. He found, upon examination, that the men did not intend to mutiny; but that the suspicion was occasioned by the lies of one man, who was hereupon sentenced by Mr. Oglethorpe to run the gauntlet.

He went to Point St. George, within sight of the Spanish look-out, and re-settled them on the same place where Mr. Hermsdorf had before taken up his quarters. It had been agreed that the Spaniards should make a signal; and from thence he would repair with his boats, to fetch Major Richards back, who was gone to Augustine, at the request of the Governor, who promised to send horses to conduct him, but did not. It likewise was agreed that the boats should patrol up and down the rivers, to prevent the Indians, our allies, passing over to molest the Spaniards; as they should prevent their Indians passing over to molest us.

Mr. Oglethorpe went that afternoon to the Spanish lookout, with a flag of truce; but not being able to perceive any one, leaving the boat at her

grappling, he leaped ashore himself, to see if he could discover anybody there; and going along the beach, at distance from the Sandy hillocks, to prevent surprise, he surrounded the hillocks, where he found two horses hobbled. He went forward to a palmetto hut; but could find no man. After this he sent the flag of truce into a great savannah, to see if that would draw down any people to a conference. Upon this W. Frazer, a Scotch lad, going into the neighbouring woods, and finding a Spaniard, brought him to Mr. Oglethorpe, to whom he

64

delivered two letters; one from Major Richards, the other from Mr. Horton, directed to Mr. Hermsdorf, acquainting him that he should be back with him in two days' time. Mr. Oglethorpe gave the man a bottle of wine, victuals, and tobacco, and a moidore for his trouble in bringing the letters; and inquired where Major Richards and Mr. Horton were. The man said he knew nothing concerning them; that he was a horseman, and sent by the Colonel of the cavalry from the headquarters, which were about twelve leagues off, with these letters, to wait there till he should see an English boat appear, and deliver it to them; that he had lain four days on the beach, and had not discovered a boat in that time. Mr. Oglethorpe delivered to him letters for the

Governor of Augustine; and between ten and eleven on Thursday morning set out with the man-of-war's boat, and Georgia scout-boat, to meet the man again, according to appointment.

He discovered a guard-coast full of men, that lay behind the sand-bank, beyond the breakers, on the English side of the water; and soon after he discovered several men hid in the woods, next to some sand-hills. Two horsemen showed themselves, and beckoned to the boats, which had a flag of truce flying, to come down to a point, beyond which the guard-coast lay concealed: on which Mr. Oglethorpe rowed with the two boats toward the guard-coast, that he might not leave her behind to intercept us and our people at St. George's Point.

There seemed to be about seventy men on board her, and there were in our boats twenty-four. She lay still for some time; but when they found plainly that they were discovered, they rowed away with incredible swiftness, directly out to sea, toward Augustine.

Mr. Oglethorpe returned to the horsemen, who seemed very unwilling to approach the boat; but at last agreed to receive a letter, if Mr.

Oglethorpe would send an unarmed man ashore. One of them, seemingly an officer, forbade the boats to land on the King of Spain's ground. Mr. Oglethorpe answered, that as it was the King of Spain's

ground, the English would forbear landing on it, since the Spaniards requested it; but that the Spaniards should be very welcome to land on the King of England's ground, which was on the opposite side of the river, and should be welcome to a glass of wine with him there. He asked him for the news of Mr. Horton and Mr. Richards, and whether

65

he could not send anything to them. The man said he knew nothing of them; that he received his orders from the Colonel of horse, who was quartered at twelve leagues' distance; and that he could carry no news but to him. Upon this Mr. Moore, Lieutenant of the "Hawke" man-of-war, wrote a letter to the Colonel of the horse, acquainting him that he was come thither with boats, to conduct back the gentlemen who were sent by Mr. Oglethorpe to treat with the Governor of Augustine; and that, if at any time he would make three fires on the Spanish main, he would take it as a signal that the gentlemen were come, and would come over with a boat and fetch them. The Spanish officer promised to deliver the letter by night to the Colonel of horse. Mr. Oglethorpe stayed till Saturday night, expecting an answer, and sent over to the Spanish side every day; but could find nobody to have conference with. By the look-out within-land they have a vineyard, flocks of turkeys, cattle, and horses; but great care was taken that none of our

people should touch any of them, On Saturday night Mr. Oglethorpe set out, leaving Captain Hermsdorf with an armed periague, the Georgia scout-boat, and another boat.

Tues., May 11th. I had now so far recovered my strength, that I could again expound the lesson. In the lesson next morning was Elisha encompassed with the host at Dothan. It is our privilege, as Christians, to apply those words to ourselves: "There be more than be with us, than those that be against us." God spoke to us yet plainer in the second lesson: "Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils; and ye shall be brought before Governors and Kings for my sake." "And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved. But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another." "The disciple is not above his master." "Fear ye not therefore: for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed, and hid that shall not be known." (Matt. 11:16-26.) In explaining this, I dwelt on that blessed topic of consolation to the innocent, that however he suffers under a false accusation here, he will shortly be cleared at God's righteous bar, where the accuser and the accused shall meet face to face, and the guilty person acquit him whom he

unjustly charged, and take back the wickedness to himself. Poor W.,

66

who was just over against me, could not stand it, but first turned her back, and then retired behind the congregation.

While I waited for Mr. Oglethorpe, setting out again for the southward,

Mr. Appee accosted me, a young gentleman, lately come from

Savannah. He mentioned his desire of being baptized (having only received lay-baptism before). I thought he ought to have a longer trial of his own sincerity. He passed on to his intended marriage with Miss Bovey, which I dissuaded him from, not thinking either sufficiently prepared for it. He had made little progress in subduing his will, and ought to be more dead to the world before he threw himself into it.

Near midnight I took leave of Mr. Oglethorpe, who set out in the scout-boat, after the other boats, for St. George's. The remainder of the night I passed upon the ground in the guard-room.

At four the next day I set out for Savannah, whither the Indian traders were coming down to meet me, and take out licences. I was overjoyed at my deliverance out of this furnace, and not a little ashamed of myself for being so.

Sun., May 16th. We landed at Skiddoway, and dined at Mrs. M.'s. I then went round, and asked the few people there were upon the island, to

come to prayers: which accordingly I read, and preached to about ten in the guardroom; and promised so to contrive, if possible, that they should be supplied once a month.

At four we returned to our boat, and by six reached Thunderbolt; whence I walked the five remaining miles to Savannah. Mr. Ingham, Mr. Delamotte, and my brother, were surprised at my unexpected visit: but it being late, we each retired to his respective corner of the room, where, without the help of a bed, we slept soundly till morning.

Wed., May 19th. According to our agreement, my brother set forward for Frederica, and I took charge of Savannah in his absence. The hardest duty imposed on me was on expounding the lesson morning and evening to one hundred hearers. I was surprised at my own confidence, and acknowledged it not my own. The day was usually divided between visiting my parishioners, considering the lesson, and conversing with Mr. Ingham, Delamotte, and Appee.

67

Tues., May 25th. I visited a girl of fifteen, who lay dying of an incurable illness. She had been in that condition many months, as her parents, some of the best people of the town, informed me. I started at the sight of a breathing corpse. Never was real corpse half so ghastly. Her groans and screams alone distinguished her from one. They had

no intermission: yet was she perfectly sensible, as appeared by her feebly lifting up her eyes, when I bade her trust in God, and read the prayers for the energumens. We were all in tears. She made signs for me to come again.

Fri., May 28th. Mr. Oglethorpe returned from the frontiers. The following account of his expedition I extracted out of his letter to the Trustees:-

"After that flagrant breach of the law of nations, putting our messengers, sent with a flag of truce, under arrest, I could expect nothing but farther hostilities, and therefore prepared to repel force by force. We fortified, with the utmost speed that the smallness of our number would allow, St. George's Point, within sight of the Spanish outguards, and were much facilitated by finding the ruins of a fort, built by Sir Francis Drake: so that we had nothing to do but to repair and palisade the breaches made by time, and to clear the ditches, which were originally thirty foot deep. The Independent Company and man-of-war being posted below Frederica, I drew out from thence, and from the Scotch settlements, what men I possibly could, to increase the garrison on St. George's Point. While we were getting down recruits and cannon, the Governor of Augustine, having before

put our messengers under arrest, sent out Don Ignatio, Colonel of foot, with thirty of his picked men, some Yamasaw Indians, and a strong boat's crew, about sixty men, in a launch, to reconnoitre our settlements; and, if he had found us so weak as the advices from Carolina said we were, to dislodge us. Don Ignatio came out by sea, and attempted to get undiscovered into Jekyl's Sound; was discovered by Ensign Delegall, who commanded guard upon the sea-point. He hailed them to give an account who they were; which they refusing, he fired some cannon with powder; and about the same time they discovered the man-of-war lying within the sound. They ran out to sea with great precipitation, and strove to get in at another inlet, by the

68

island of Cumberland; where the Scotch from St. Andrews challenged them. They neither answered, nor hung out colours, but rowed away in such haste, that the same night they reached the Spanish outguards, on St. John's river, near sixty miles distant.

"Don Ignatio landed in the night, and had a conference with Don Pedro de Lamberti, the Commander of the Spanish horse; who had come up by land to the look-out, with one hundred and sixty foot, and fifty horse. They concluded by the two forts they had met with, and the man-of-war's being there, that all our strength lay at Frederica,

and that we were weak at Fort St. George; therefore resolved to try to surprise some of our boats, and upon their intelligence leave their horses, carry over their men by water, and attack us the night following. This was on Wednesday. I, having discovered some fires on the Spanish main, concluded troops came down, and therefore, in order to make them delay attacking us till our succours should arrive on Thursday morning, I had two carriage-guns, and two swivel-guns, which we had brought with us, carried into the woods, that the

Spaniards might not distinguish where they were fired; and ordered the swivel-guns to be re-charged so often as to make a salute of seven, and with the carriage-guns fired five shot in answer. The swivel-guns, by reason of the smallness of the report, seemed like a ship at a distance saluting, and the carriage-guns like batteries answering from the shore.

"I set out with two boats, and a flag of truce, to meet the Spaniards. They concluded from the guns, as I have heard since, that there was a new strength arrival; in which they were confirmed by our boats rowing briskly toward them: on which their launch thought proper to make the best of their way toward Augustine. There the soldiers and boatmen, fatigued with over-labour, spread such dismal accounts, magnifying our strength and diligence, in order to save their own reputation, that they created a general uproar among the people.

"That night I had several fires made in the woods, some at two, some at three, miles' distance from Point St. George. On Friday morning the foot and horse, under the command of Don Pedro, finding themselves abandoned by the launch, and therefore in no possibility of passing over into the island against us; and from the many fires in the woods

collecting that the Creek Indians were come up; having left a small guard of horse to observe our motions, retired in good order to

Augustine. Their arrival doubled the confusion, they apprehending that if the Indians should cut off their communication by land, as the man-of-war might do by sea, they should perish by famine. The Governor was obliged to call a council of war, in which the oldest officers, and indeed almost all, gave their opinion, that the gentlemen sent by me should be immediately released, and sent back in the most honourable manner, with an officer attending them, to treat with me, and desire me to restrain the Indians from invading them: at the same time to ask me why we settled upon lands and territories belonging to the King of Spain.

"Not knowing anything of these proceedings, except that the Spaniards were retired, I lay at Fort St. George from Thursday to Sunday; in which time fresh troops arrived: and falling all of us to work, with the officers and men of the King's troop, who distinguished themselves upon this occasion, we mounted some guns upon the batteries along the river, and got the fortifications in good forwardness; and having left the fort under the command of Captain Hermsdorf, retired with the utmost diligence to Frederica.

"There I found the King of the Uchees, with thirty men, who offered to

assist me with one hundred more against the Spaniards. King Tome Chachi was also there, with thirty men, and an account that hundreds of the Creeks eagerly desired to fall upon the Spaniards. In three days I set out with a large periagua, and fifty men, cannon and provision for two months, two ten-cared boats, and the Indians in their own boats, to relieve St. George, which I imagined by that time might be besieged. God was pleased to prosper us; so that about fifteen miles from St. George's, being fortunately an hour a-head of the rest of the boats, I met a Spanish boat, with a flag of truce flying, and Mr. Dempsey, and the gentlemen sent to Augustine, in her, together with Don Pedro de Lamberti, Captain of their troop of horse, and Don Manuel, Secretary to the Governor, and Adjutant of the garrison. It was lucky the Indians were not foremost; for if they had been, they would certainly have engaged the Spanish boat; which, as it was, I could hardly prevent, by sending a ten-cared boat to guard them to Frederica. Then I ordered

70

them to be received on board the man-of-war, where they dined with me. I received them with the greatest form I could, having a guard of the King's troops on the right hand, with their bayonets fixed; and on the left hand the Highlanders, with their targets, and broad-swords drawn.

"After dinner we drank the King of Britain's and the King of Spain's health, under the discharge of cannon from the ship; which was answered with fifteen pieces of cannon from Delegall's fort, at the sea-point. That again was followed by the cannon from the fort of St. Andrews, and that by those of Frederica and the Darien, as I had before ordered. The Spaniards seemed extremely surprised that there should be so many forts, and all within hearing of one another. Don Pedro smiled, and said, ' No wonder Don Ignatio made more haste home than out.' After the healths were done, a great number of Indians came on board, naked, painted, and their heads dressed in feathers. They demanded of me justice against the Spaniards, for having killed some of their men in time of full peace. They farther proved, that after the woman was taken, she was abused by numbers of men; and when she had satisfied their lust for two days, they inhumanly burned her alive.

"Don Pedro, having asked several questions, acknowledged himself fully satisfied of the fact; excusing it by saying he was then in Mexico; and that the Governor, being newly come from Spain, and not knowing the customs of the country, had sent out Indians under the command of the Pohoia King of the Floridas, who had exceeded his orders, which

were not to make war with the Creeks. But the Indians not being content with that answer, he undertook that, at his return to Augustine, he would have the Pohoia King put to death, if he could be taken; and if he could not, that the Spaniards would supply his people with neither powder, arms, nor anything else, but leave them to the Creeks. The Indians answered that he spake well; and if the Spaniards did what he said, all should be white between them; but if not, they would take revenge; from which, at my desire, they would abstain till a final answer came.

"The Indian matters being thus settled, we had a conference with the Spanish Commissioners. They thanked me for my restraining the

71

Indians who were in my power, and hoped I would extend that care to the upper Indians. They then, after having produced their credentials, presented a paper, the contents whereof were to know by what title I settled upon St. Simon's, being lands belonging to the King of Spain. I took the paper, promising an answer the next day. The substance was, that the lands belonged to the King of England by undoubted right; that I had proceeded with the utmost caution, having taken with me Indians, the natives, and possessors of those lands; that I had examined every place, to see if there were any Spanish possessions,

and went forward till I found an outguard of theirs, over against which I settled the English, without committing any hostilities, or dislodging any. Therefore-I did not extend the King's dominions, but only settled with regular garrisons that part of them which was before a shelter for Indians, Pireks, and such sort of disorderly men.

"The rest of the evening we spent in conversation, which chiefly turned upon the convenience it would be, both to the Spaniards and English, to have regular garrisons in sight of each other. Don Pedro smiled, and said he readily agreed to that; and should like very well to have their Spanish guard upon the south side of the river (which is within five miles of Charlestown, and where the Spaniards had a garrison in King Charles the First's time). I replied, I thought it was better as it was for there were a great many people living between, who could never be persuaded to come into his sentiments. At last Don Pedro acquainted me, that he thought the Spaniards would refer the settling of the limits to the courts of Europe: for which purpose he would write to their court and in the meantime desired no hostilities might be committed; and that I would send up a Commissary to sign with the Government an agreement to this purpose. I thereupon appointed Mr. Dempsey to be my Commissary, and to return with

them.

"Don Pedro is the ruling man in Augustine, and has more interest with the Council of War than the Governor. As he passed by St. George's Point, he sent a whole ox as a present to their garrison. He gave me some sweetmeats and chocolate. I gave him a gold watch, a gun, and fresh provisions. To Don Manuel I gave a silver watch, and sent back a boat to escort them. If the Spaniards had committed any hostilities, I

72

could, by the help of the Indians, have destroyed Augustine with great facility. But, God be praised, by His blessing, the diligence of Dempsey, and the prudence of Don Pedro, all bloodshed was avoided."

Sat., May 29th. At ten this evening I first met my traders, at Mr. Causton's, the head bailiff: as I did some or other of them every day for some weeks.

Mon., May 31st. About noon Mr. Oglethorpe sent us word that he was going to court. We went, and heard his speech to the people, in the close of which he said, "If any one here has been abused or oppressed by any man, in or out of employment, he has free and full liberty of complaining. Let him deliver in his complaints in writing, at my house. I will read all over by myself, and do every particular man justice."

At eight in the evening I waited upon him, and found the three

Magistrates, who seemed much alarmed by his speech, and hoped he would not discourage government. He dismissed them, and told me, he feared his following my brother's advice, in hearing all complaints, would ruin the people; and he should never have any to serve him. I replied, I thought the contrary; and that such liberty was the happiest thing that could happen to the colony, and much to be desired by all good men. He fell, I know not how, into talk of Frederica, and said, Sun., June 6th. I passed good part of this as of every day in conversing with Mr. Appee, who generally breakfasted and supped at our house. The subject of our discourse was my intention of resigning my place, which I resolved to do after my last conference with Mr. Oglethorpe. The giving up my salary and certain hopes of preferment weighed nothing against my resolution. I made Mr. Appee a proffer of them, which he did not accept, being obliged to return, to look after his fortune in Holland.

Tues., June 8th. I was present at court, and heard the accusations against Mr. Causton, who stood by while Parker, the first tribune of the people, on whom the malcontents had built all their hopes, brought the heaviest charges I suppose that could be brought against him. But they were so incredible, trifling, and childish, that I thought them a full

vindication of the Magistrates, and admired Mr. Oglethorpe's patience in hearing them.

73

Wed., June 16th. This and many foregoing days have been mostly spent in drawing up bonds and affidavits, licences and instructions, for the traders; the evenings in writing letters for Mr. Oglethorpe. We seldom parted till midnight. To-night, at half-hour past twelve, he set out in the scout-boat for Frederica. I went to bed at one, and rose again at four; but found no effect this variety of fatigue had upon my body till some time after.

Sun., June 20th. Walking in the Trustees' garden, I met the Miss Boveys, whom I had never been in company with. I found some inclination to join them; but it was a very short-lived curiosity.

Sat., June 26th. Mr. Oglethorpe and my brother returned from Frederica.

Thur., July 1st. I was at court while the Creek Indians had an audience with Mr. Oglethorpe; which I took down (as several afterwards) in short hand.

Wed., July 7th. Between four and five this morning Mr. Delamotte and I went into the Savannah. We chose this hour for bathing, both for the

coolness, and because the alligators were not stirring so soon. We heard them indeed snoring all around us; and one very early riser swam by within a few yards of us. On Friday morning we had hardly left our usual place of swimming, when we saw an alligator in possession of it. Once afterwards Mr. Delamotte was in great danger; for an alligator rose just behind him, and pursued him to the land, whither he narrowly escaped.

Sat., July 10th. I was waked by the news my brother brought us, of Miss Bovey's sudden death. It called up all my sorrow and envy. "Ah, poor Ophelia!" was continually in my mind, "I thought thou shouldst have been my Hamlet's wife." Mr. Appee was just set out for Charlestown, [on his way to] Holland, intending to return, when he had settled his affairs, and marry her. "But death had quicker wings than love."

The following evening I saw her in her coffin, and soon seen in her grave.

Wed., July 21st. I heard by my brother that I was to set sail in a few

74

days for England.

Thur., July 22. To-day I got their licences signed by Mr. Oglethorpe,

countersigned them myself, and so entirely washed my hands of the traders.

Sun., July 25th. I resigned my Secretary's place, in a letter to Mr. Oglethorpe. After prayers he took me aside, and asked me whether all I had said was not summed up in the line he showed me on my letter:-
I leave as gifts things more suitable to you.

"Sir, to yourself your slighted gifts I leave,
Less fit for me to take, than you to give."

I answered, I desired not to lose his esteem, but could not preserve it with the loss of my soul. He answered, he was satisfied of my regard for him; owned my argument drawn from the heart unanswerable; and yet, said he, "I would desire you not to let the Trustees know your resolution of resigning. There are many hungry fellows ready to catch at the office; and in my absence I cannot put in one of my own choosing. The best I can hope for is an honest Presbyterian, as many of the Trustees are such. Perhaps they may send me a bad man; and how far such a one may influence the traders, and obstruct the reception of the Gospel among the Heathen, you know. I shall be in England before you leave it. Then you may either put in a deputy or resign.

"You need not be detained in London above three days; and only speak

to some of my particular friends, (Vernon, Hutchinson, and Towers,) to the Board of Trustees, when called upon, and the Board of Trade.

"On many accounts I should recommend to you marriage, rather than celibacy. You are of a social temper, and would find in a married state the difficulties of working out your salvation exceedingly lessened, and your helps as much increased."

Mon., July 26th. The words which concluded the lesson, and my stay in Georgia, were, "Arise, let us go hence." Accordingly at twelve I took my final leave of Savannah.

When the boat put off I was surprised that I felt no more joy in leaving

75

such a scene of sorrows.

July 31st. I arrived with my brother at Charlestown. I lay that night at an inn. Next morning I was much rejoiced at hearing Mr. Appee was still in town, waiting for my company to England. His ingenuous, open temper, and disengagement from the world, made me promise myself a very improving and agreeable voyage: especially as I doubted not but the sudden death of his mistress had taken off that appearance of lightness, which I attributed rather to his youth and education, than any natural inconstancy. After breakfasting with Mr. Eveley, a merchant who had bespoke lodgings for us, I went in quest of my

friend. We met with equal satisfaction on both sides: but I did not observe those deep traces of sorrow and seriousness which I expected. I asked him whether his loss had had its due effect, in making his heart more tender, and susceptible of divine impressions. By his answer I concluded his heart was right, and its uppermost desire was to recover the divine image.

Something of this desire I felt myself at the holy sacrament, and found myself encouraged, by an unusual hope of pardon, to strive against sin.

Mon., August 2nd. I had observed much, and heard more, of the cruelty of masters towards their negroes; but now I received an authentic account of some horrid instances thereof. The giving a child a slave of its own age to tyrannize over, to beat and abuse out of sport, was, I myself saw, a common practice. Nor is it strange, being thus trained up in cruelty, they should afterwards arrive at so great perfection in it; that Mr. Star, a gentleman I often met at Mr. Lasserre's, should, as he himself informed L., first nail up a negro by the ears, then order him to be whipped in the severest manner, and then to have scalding water thrown over him, so that the poor creature could not stir for four months after. Another much-applauded punishment

is, drawing their slaves' teeth. One Colonel Lynch is universally known to have cut off a poor negro's legs; and to kill several of them every year by his barbarities.

It were endless to recount all the shocking instances of diabolical cruelty which these men (as they call themselves daily practise upon

76

their fellow-creatures; and that on the most trivial occasions. I shall only mention one more, related to me by a Swiss gentleman, Mr.

Zouerbuhler, an eye-witness, of Mr. Hill, a dancing-master in Charlestown. He whipped a she-slave so long, that she fell down at his feet for dead. When, by the help of a physician, she was so far recovered as to show signs of life, he repeated the whipping with equal rigour, and concluded with dropping hot sealing-wax upon her flesh. Her crime was overfilling a tea-cup.

These horrid cruelties are the less to be wondered at, because the government itself, in effect, countenances and allows them to kill their slaves, by the ridiculous penalty appointed for it, of about seven pounds sterling, half of which is usually saved by the criminal's informing against himself. This I can look upon as no other than a public act to indemnify murder.

Wed., August 11th. Coming on board our ship, I found the honest

Captain had let my cabin to another. My flux and fever that has hung upon me, forced me for some nights past to go into a bed; but now my only bed was a chest, on which I threw myself in my boots, and was not overmuch troubled with sleep till the morning. What was still worse, I then had no asylum to fly to from the Captain; the most beastly man I ever saw; a lewd, drunken, quarrelsome fool; praying, and yet swearing continually. The first sight I had of him was upon the cabin-floor, stark naked, and dead drunk.

Fri., August 13th. The wind was still contrary; so that we were forced to lie off the bar, about five miles from Charlestown.

Mon., August 16th. A faint breeze springing up, the pilot, weary of waiting a week to no purpose, said he would venture over the bar, though he feared there was not water enough. Accordingly we attempted it, and had got above half of the two miles between us and the sea, when a violent squall arose, and drove the ship before it with incredible swiftness. Before it began we were almost becalmed, so that it saved the ship, at least, from being a-ground, though with the immediate hazard both of that and our lives. The sailors were in great consternation, expecting to be stranded every moment. The pilot cursed the ship most heartily, and the hour he set foot in her. Having

scraped along the ground for some minutes before, the ship at last stuck. She got clear, and stuck fast a second time; and immediately fell into seven fathom water.

The Mate afterwards told me, it was one thousand to one but she had been lost by the Captain's folly and ignorance, in letting fly the mainsail, while we struck on the bar; which was the surest way to fix her there; as it must have done had we not been on the very edge of it. Tues., August 17th. We were much surprised (the passengers, I mean) at finding, as soon as over the bar, that two of our twelve sailors were obliged to pump every half-hour.

Mon., August 23rd. I rose in the night to appease a quarrel between the second Mate and the Captain, who was continually interrupting the officers in their duty; giving out, as they informed me, such orders as would, if followed, cost them the ship and their lives. His indignation at present was occasioned by their furling some of the sails in the greatest squall we have yet met with.

Thur., August 26th. We saw a brigantine, standing to the windward of us, but quickly lost sight of her. Had she come near us, Mr. Appee and I intended to have gone on board her; for we cannot yet believe we shall come to England in this ship.

Fri., August 27th. We came to an allowance of water, the Captain knowing nothing of what we had on board, till the officers informed him. Indeed, at his rate of drinking, we must quickly come to a shorter allowance; for while any of his half-hogshead of rum remains, here will be nothing but punch, and drams, and drunkenness without end. This morning Mr. Appee laid aside his mask. He began by telling me all Mr. Oglethorpe had ever said to him, particularly his inmost thoughts of my brother and me; that he ridiculed our pretended fasting in the ship; that he took all my abstemiousness for mere hypocrisy, and put on for fear of my brother; for he saw how very uneasy I was under the restraint; that he much blamed my carelessness, my closeness, my frightening the people, and stirring them up to mutiny, &c., &c.; that he found I apprehended being turned out of my office, and therefore pretended to be weary of it; that to save my reputation, he had found

78

me an errand to England, but never expected my return, any more than my brother's going to the Indians, which he well knew he never intended, but he would make his own use of him; that he greatly admired his finesse, in offering to go to the Choctaws in all haste, but at the same time procuring the Germans to dissuade him. In a word, he believed him to have a little sincerity, but more vanity: me to have

much vanity, but no sincerity at all.

I asked Appee whether his judgment was the same. He answered, "Yes;" that my brother, he believed, was labouring to establish a character for sanctity; was exceedingly subtle, keeping me in the dark, as well as all others; yet credulous, and easy to be imposed upon himself; that he pitied his ignorance, in taking him (Appee) to be sincere; particularly in regard to his breaking off with Miss Bovey, which he intended, not in pursuance of his ghostly advice, but of Mr. Oglethorpe's, who had told him she was below his aspiring genius; that after his fine talk with my brother, he never made the least alteration in his own behaviour, or thought any farther about it.

While he was giving this blessed account of himself, I could not help reflecting on the profound sagacity and spiritual discernment of my brother and myself; particularly his, who was born for the benefit of knaves. If you would be alert, may you wake up. For my own part, I will never imitate, I will ever beware of, men, as He who best knows them advises.

I will not think all men rogues, till I find them otherwise, (according to Appee's avowed principle,) but I will insist upon a far different probation from what my brother requires, before I take any one into

my confidence.

I next inquired what his thoughts were of me. He frankly replied, he took me to be partly in earnest; but I had a much greater mind to please myself than to please God. Yet as for money, I did not much value it; but in my eagerness for pleasure and praise, I was a man after his own heart.: that as I could not hold it, he wished I would leave off my strictness; for I should then be much better company. As for himself, he said his only principle was an insatiable thirst of glory; that Georgia was too narrow a sphere for him, and that therefore he

79

should never see it more.

Yet he desired my friendship, because I had learning, was sincere, and of his temper; but he should like me much better, if I were not a Parson. I had before let him into my own affairs, and read him my letter of resignation to Mr. Oglethorpe. His remark upon that was, "It is finely calculated for the end you propose, - the engaging Mr.

Oglethorpe's opinion and interest; but he will understand you."

Sat., August 28th. After a restless, tempestuous night, I hardly rose at eight. Our happier Captain, having got his dose, could sleep a day and a night upon the stretch, and defy either pumps or squall to wake him.

Mon., August 30th. At noon we were alarmed by an outcry of the

sailors, at their having continued pumping several hours, without being able to keep the water under. They desired the Captain to put into some port, before they were got out to sea too far for returning; but he was too drunk to regard them. At five the sailors came down in a body to the great cabin, waked, and told him it was as much as their lives were worth to proceed on the voyage, unless their leaks were stopped; that he remembered it was as much as ever they could do to keep the ship above water in their passage from Boston, being forced to pump without ceasing; that the turpentine fell down upon, and choked up, the pumps continually: nor was it possible to get at it, or to hold out in such continual labour; which made them so thirsty, they could not live on their allowance of water; that they must come to shorter still, through his neglect to take in five more hogsheads of water, as his Mate advised him; that he owned they had no candles for half the voyage: on all which accounts they begged him to consider whether their common safety did not require them to put in at some land, for more water and candles, and, above all, to stop their leaks. The Captain, having now slept out his rum, replied, "To be sure, the men talked reason," and, without consulting any of his officers, immediately gave orders to stand away for Boston.

September 4 - December 30, 1736

Sat., September 4th. Appee laid a train for the Captain, and betrayed him into talking lewdly; for which I reproved him too sharply, and

80

thereby increased his bedsfitness. He abused me plentifully, till I ceased to take any notice of him. In the evening he set upon me again;

but I turned from him, and talked Latin to Zouerbuhler. This made him more outrageous. He blew out the candle by which I was writing.

Zouerbuhler lit it; and he blew it out again: on which we all set upon

him; I only talking Latin or Greek. He told me I was drunk, mad, an emissary, a Jesuit, a devil; but could not get one English word from me.

The gentlemen, particularly Appee, baited him to his heart's content;

and having laughed upon the stretch till near midnight, we then

suffered the poor beast to return to his litter. The next day we said

neither good nor bad to him; but he was not continent of speech. His

indignation was mostly vented upon me, "the arch-rebel," as he called me, for my "audacious talk." In the evening he again put out

Zouerbuhler's candle; upon which Appee pulled out his spieket of

the rum, and let it run about the cabin. This was the cruellest

Punishment ['that] could have been devised; and farther heightened

by our mirth at his inimitable resentment. Zouerbuhler lighted up

the candle in his own cabin every now and then, bringing it into the great cabin; and when the Captain (whose motions were not of the nimblest) had come out of bed to put it out, Zouberbuhler carried it back again. He called down his men ten times, ordering them to bind us in our beds, to our and their no small diversion. He offered to get at the candle in Zouberbuhler's cabin; but the Swiss stood sentinel at his cabin-door, and then he might as well have wrenched a bone from Cerberus. The Captain gave it over, as impossible, drank a hearty dram, and dropped asleep.

Wed., September 15th. This is the first time I have heard a sailor confess it was a storm. We lay under our mainsail, and let the ship drive, being by conjecture about sixty leagues from Boston, upon George's Bank; though, as we hoped, past the shoals in it. The Captain never troubled himself about anything; but lay snoring even in such a night as the last, though frequently called, without ever stirring, either for squalls, or soundings, or shoals.

In the afternoon the Mate came down, having sounded, and found forty, and soon after twenty, fathom; told the Captain he apprehended coming into shoaler water still; and therefore it would be necessary to

reef the foresail and mainsail in readiness, that in case we fell foul of the shoals, (being upon George's Bank, and in a storm,) the ship might

have head-way, to get clear again. This the Captain absolutely refused; and, though told it could do no possible harm, and might be the saving of the ship and us, persisted in his obstinacy; so that the Mate left him to sleep, and the ship to take care of itself. But it pleased God to abate the storm, and on Thursday, about twelve, entirely to remove it.

Mon., September 20th. At seven, Mr. Graham, the first Mate, came to ask for directions, as he constantly does, and the Captain as constantly shifting him off, and leaving the whole management of the ship to him, or chance, or any body. The conversation being somewhat remarkable, I took it down in short-hand, as they were speaking it.

MATE - Captain Indivine, what would you have us do? What course would you have us to steer to-night?"

CAPTAIN. - "Even what course you will. We have a fair wind."

M. - "Yes, Sir; and it drives us full upon the land, which cannot be many leagues off."

C. - "Then I think you had best keep forward."

M. - "Would you have us go on all night, and venture running upon the land?"

C. - "I don't know. Go on."

M. - "But there are shoals and rocks before us."

C. - "Why, then, have a good look-out."

M. - "But you cannot see twice the ship's length. What would you order me to do?"

C. - "These rebels and emissaries have excited you to come and ask for orders. I don't know what you mean."

M. - "Sir, nobody has excited me. I come, as it is my duty, to my Captain for directions."

C. - "Have you a mind to quarrel with me?"

82

M. - "I have a mind to know what you will do."

C. - "Nay, what will you do, if it come to that?"

M. - "Am I your Captain or you mine?"

C. - "I am your Captain, and will make you know it, Mr. Man. Do what I order you; for you must and shall."

M. - "Why, Sir, you order me nothing."

C. - "You would not have me come upon deck myself, sure."

M. - "If you did, I should not think it would be much amiss. Some Captains would not have stirred off deck a moment in such a night as this. Here you lie, without so much as ever once looking out, to see how things are."

C. - "Yes, I have been upon deck this very day."

M. - "But you have taken no account of anything, or given yourself the least trouble about the ship, for many days past."

C. - "It is all one for that. I know where we are exactly."

M. - "How far do you think we may be from land?"

C. - "Why, just thirty-five leagues. I am sure of it."

M. - "How is that possible? You have taken no observation this fortnight; nor have we got one these four days."

C. - "No matter for that. I know we are safe."

M. - "The most skilful sailor alive cannot know it. Be pleased only to declare what you would have done. Shall we sail on? Shall we lay by? Shall we alter our course? Shall we stand in and off?" He went on repeating such questions again and again; but as to giving an answer, the Captain chose to be excused; till the Mate, quite out of patience, having waited an hour to no purpose, left him; and the Captain concluded all with, "Jack, give me a dram!"

Tues., September 21st. The sailors, who were upon' deck all night, saw three large ships coming, as they supposed, out of the bay; but in vain

83

attempted to speak with them. At three I was waked by a cry of

"Land!" The Mate said we were just upon it; for he saw the light of the watch-house; and if they did not tack about immediately, they would be upon the rocks, which lay just before them under the water. At the same time it blew a storm. The uproar was so great, that it even waked the Captain, who started up, ran to his rum, drank a hearty draught, and then looked upon deck; but not much liking things there, came down again immediately, cried, "Ay, ay; all will be well;" and dropped asleep again.

Wed., September 22nd. Having sailed for some hours without discovering land, we began to think the light which the Mate had seen was of some ship, and not the lighthouse. At two we made land; which the men soon found to be Cape Cod, about eighteen leagues from Boston. The wind blew from shore, yet we kept our course. At midnight the storm gave place to a calm. These have constantly succeeded each other since our leaving Charlestown.

Thur., September 23rd. The fineness of the weather invited even Mr. Appee upon deck, who usually disposes of twenty-three of the twenty-four hours in bed. His vanity betrayed him into farther discoveries of himself. He laboured to show me the only difference between us lay in externals, through the difference of our education. I had the same views that he had, but was forced by the restraints of a narrower

education to dissemble those inclinations which he had given a loose to. The case was the same with my brother: a much better hypocrite, he said, than me; and who would have made an excellent Jesuit. But Mr. Oglethorpe understood him, though for his own convenience he would not seem to do so.

Upon my asking him how he accounted for the great pains my brother had taken with him, he readily answered, That was all grimace. My brother could not but be mightily pleased with the reputation such a convert would gain to his sanctity, which had charms to win over so wild a young gentleman, of his parts. But how could you bear him so long, if you had no esteem for him, or regard to his advice "Why, it was so new a gratification to me to be thought religious, that I found no difficulty in keeping on the mask: and I had got such a knack of going to prayers and sacrament, that I don't know but I should have been

84

actually caught at last."

Fri., September 24th. Being within sight of the lighthouse, at nine in the morning, the pilot came on board us. At two I gladly obeyed his hasty summons, and went into his boat with the other passengers, bidding an hearty farewell to our wretched ship, and more wretched

Captain, who for the two last days had, most happily for us, lain dead drunk on the floor, without sense or motion.

I was at leisure now to contemplate a prospect entirely new, and beautiful beyond all I had ever seen. We sailed smoothly on, in a vast bason, as it seemed, bounded on all sides with small innumerable islands. Some of these were entire rock, in height and colour not unlike Dover cliffs: others steep, and covered with woods. Here and there lay a round hill, entirely clothed with green; and all at such equal distances, that the passages seemed artificially made, to admit the narrow streams between.

Having passed one of these passages, we were presented With a new set of hills, and rocks, and woods, in endless variety; till we came to the castle, three miles from Boston. From thence we had a full view of the town, stretched out a mile and a half upon the shore, in a semicircle. We landed at Long Wharf, which we walked straight up, having a row of houses on one side, and near two hundred sail of ships on the other. I lodged in a public house; went to bed at eleven. Appee followed me, drunk, between one and two in the morning.

Sat., September 25th. I called several times at Mr. Price, the Commissary's, before I found him at home. At first he looked as not

believing me to be a Clergyman (my ship-clothes not being the best credentials). But when I returned in my habit, (Dr. Cutler having met him meantime, and informed him of me,) he received me very cordially, and pressed me to live with him while I stayed in Boston. Sun., September 26th. I preached in the morning at Dr. Cutler's church, in the afternoon at Mr. Price's, on the one thing needful.

In the evening I first fell into company with Mr. John Chicheley, a right honest zealous advocate for the Church of England, who has, on that account, been cruelly persecuted by the Presbyterians.

85

Thur., September 30th. In the morning I waited upon the Governor. At noon Mr. Millar, a good-natured Clergyman, visited me. The rest of this and the following day I employed in writing to my friends at Charlestown.

Fri., October 1st. I wrote to my brother concerning my return to Georgia, which I found myself inclined to refer wholly to God.

Sat., October 2nd. I rode out with Mr. Price, in his chaise, to see the country, which is wonderfully delightful.

The only passage out of town is a neck of land about two hundred yards over; all the rest being encircled with the sea. The temperate air, the clear rivulets, and the beautiful hills and dales, which we

everywhere met with, seemed to present the very reverse of Georgia.

Sun., October 3rd. After near two months' want of it, I again enjoyed the benefit of the sacrament, which I assisted Dr. Cutler to administer.

I preached on, "There the wicked cease from troubling, and there the weary are at rest:" as I did again in the afternoon for Mr. Price, though I found my strength sensibly abated

Mon., October 4th. I rode with Mr. and Mrs. Price, Dr. Cutler, his son, and Mr. Brig, (two Cambridge scholars,) to see Mr. Millar, at Braintree.

At our return we found Mr. Davenport, who was come to see me, a worthy Clergyman, as deserving of the name as any I see in New England.

Tues., October 5th. I dined at Mr. Plasted's, a London acquaintance of my brother's; who from thence took occasion to find me out, and showed me all the friendship and civility he could, while I stayed in Boston. After dinner I drove Mr. Cutler to Cambridge. I had only time to observe the civility of the Fellows, the regularity of the buildings, and pleasantness of the situation.

Sat., October 9th. I was dragged out to consult Dr. Graves about my increasing flux. He prescribed a vomit, from which I received much benefit.

Sun., October 10th. I recovered a little strength in the sacrament; but

my body was extremely weakened by preaching twice.

86

Tues., October 12th. I supped with several of the Clergy, at Mr.

Chicheley's, who entertained us very agreeably with his adventures.

He seems to have excellent natural parts, much solid learning, and true primitive piety; is acquainted with the power, and therefore holds fast the form, of godliness; obstinate as was my father in good, and not to be borne down by evil.

Thur., October 14th. I was taken up with the Clergy, in drawing up a recommendation of him to the Bishop of London, for orders. The Bishop had been formerly frightened from ordaining him, by the outcries of the Presbyterians. They were wise to keep a man out of the ministry, who had in a private capacity approved himself such a champion for the Church.

Sat., October 16th. My illness increasing, notwithstanding all the Doctors could do for me, I began seriously to consider my condition; and at my evening hour of retirement found benefit from Pascal's prayer in sickness.

Sun., October 17th. While I was talking at Mr. Chicheley's on spiritual religion, his wife observed that I seemed to have much the same way

of thinking with Mr. Law. Glad I was and surprised to hear that good man mentioned; and confessed, all I knew of religion was through him. I found she was well acquainted with his Serious Call; and has one of the two that are in New-England. I borrowed it, and passed the evening in reading it to the family (Mr. Williams's, where I have been some days). His daughter and he seemed satisfied and affected.

Mon., October 18th. Many appointed days of embarkation had come and gone, without our embarking; but this was certainty to be the last. Accordingly Mr. Millar came very early to attend me to the ship. I took occasion to mention the book I had borrowed of his sister, Mrs. Chicheley, and read him the characters of Cognatus and Uranius. He liked them much, and promised he would carefully read the whole. Breakfast and dinner passed, but no summons to go on board.

Tuesday and Wednesday I grew worse and worse; and on Thursday, October 21st, was forced to keep my chamber through pain. Appee came, and laboured all he could to dissuade me from the voyage, promising himself to deliver my letters and papers, and excuse me to

87

Mr. Oglethorpe. Mr. Price, Williams, &c., joined him: but I put an end to their importunity, by assuring them, nothing less than death should hinder my embarking.

Fri., October 22nd. All things being at last in readiness, the wind providentially changed, and afforded me three days more to try experiments. Within that time I vomited, purged, bled, sweated, and took laudanum, which entirely drained me of the little strength I had left. It may be of use hereafter to remember Appee's behaviour at Boston. He gave out that his design in coming to Georgia had been to take charge of the people there: but finding Mr. Oglethorpe just such a genius as himself, he thought his own stay there was not so necessary, but he might safely quit the interest of the colony; which, had it not been to such a hand, he could never have prevailed upon himself to do: that at present he was unresolved where to bestow himself; only that it should be on that part of mankind which needed him the most: that he was going to England about matters of the last importance. Two or three letters of no moment he said, I carried; but all secret dispatches, to the Duke of Newcastle, and other Ministers of state, he was charged with. From the court of Great Britain he was to be sent Envoy to Spain. His money, a few hundred pounds, he had (in some companies) sent before him to England; in others, had turned it into silver, and freighted Indivine's ship.

Mon., October 25th. I waked surprisingly better, though not yet able to

walk. This morning Dr. Graves came over from Charlestown to see me, gave me physic and advice; which he likewise left in writing; but would take no fee for either. The same civility I received from Dr. Gibbons, Dr. Gardener, and others. A little after Mr. Chicheley came, and brought me a summons to go aboard. Mr. Price drove me to the wharf, having called by the way on some of my new friends, from whom I have received all the instances of kindness in their power to show.

When we came to the wharf, the boat was not ready; so we were forced to walk half an hour in the open cold air. Mr. Chicheley helped me into the boat, and covered me up. In about two hours we reached the ship; and with Mr. Zouerbuhler, Mr. Appee, Mr. Cutler, and Mr. Brig, went on board. I lay down in the state-room, less fatigued with

88

the passage than I expected.

Finding Appee wanted his state-room again, I quitted it, and accepted Mr. Cutlet's offer of his cabin. I had a tolerable night, though stripped of the conveniences I so long enjoyed on shore.

Tues., October 26th. I entered upon the Doctor's regimen, and quickly found the benefit. When five leagues onward on our voyage, the wind

changing, forced us back again. In the evening it came fair, and by the next day carried us clear of all land.

Wed., October 27th. I began public prayers in the great cabin. We had seldom any present but the passengers. I had not yet strength to read the lesson, nor attention for any harder study than Clarendon's History. In the night I was much disquieted by the colic.

Thur., October 28th. The Captain warned me of a storm approaching. In the evening, at eight, it came, and rose higher and higher, after I thought it must have come to its strength; for I did not lose a moment of it, being obliged by the return of my flux to rise continually. At last the long-wished-for morning came, but brought no abatement of the storm. There was so prodigious a sea, that it quickly washed away our sheep, and half our hogs, and drowned most of our fowl. The ship had been new caulked at Boston; how carefully, it now appeared: for being deeply laden, the sea streamed in at the sides so plentifully, that it was as much as four men could do, by continual pumping, to keep her above water. I rose and lay down by turns, but could remain in no posture long; Strove vehemently to pray, but in vain; persisted in striving, yet still without effect. I prayed for power to pray, for faith in Jesus Christ, continually repeating his name, till I felt the virtue of it at

last, and knew that I abode under the shadow of the Almighty.

It was now about three in the afternoon, and the storm at the height. I endeavoured to encourage poor Mr. Brig and Cutler, who were in the utmost agony of fear. I prayed with them, and for them, till four; at which time the ship made so much water, that the Captain, finding it otherwise impossible to save her from sinking, cut down the mizen mast. In this dreadful moment, I bless God, I found the comfort of hope; and such joy in finding I could hope, as the world can neither give nor take away. I had that conviction of the power of God, present

89

with me, overruling my strongest passion, fear, and raising me above what I am by nature, as surpassed all rational evidence, and gave me a taste of the divine goodness.

At the same time I found myself constrained in spirit to bear witness to the truth, perhaps for the last time, before my poor friend Appee. I went to him, declared the difference between one that feareth God, and one that feareth him not; avowed my hope, not because I had attained, but because I had endeavoured it; and testified my expectation, if God should now require my soul of me, that he would receive it to his mercy.

My poor friend was convinced, but stupid; owned the happiness of the

most imperfect Christian; an happiness he himself was a stranger to; and therefore, he said, all his refuge was, in time of danger, to persuade himself there was none. Mr. Cutler frequently calling upon God to have mercy upon his soul, Appee confessed he greatly envied him, as he had no manner of concern for his own. I advised him to pray. He answered, it was mocking God to begin praying in danger, when he had never done it in safety. I only added, I then hoped, if God spared him now, he would immediately set himself about working out his salvation, which depended on the one condition of exchanging this world for the next. Mr. Zouberbuhler was present at this conference, and behaved as a Christian ought to do.

I returned to Mr. Brig and Mr. Cutler, and endeavoured from their fear to show them the want of religion, which was intended for our support on such occasions; urged them to resolve, if God saved them from this distress, that they would instantly, and entirely, give themselves up to Him.

The wind was still as high as ever, but the motion rather less violent since the cutting the mast; and we did not ship quite so much water. I laid me down, utterly exhausted; but my distemper was so increased, it would not suffer me to rest. Toward morning the sea heard and

obeyed the divine voice, "Peace, be still!"

Sun., October 31st. My first business to-day (may it be the business of all my days!) was to offer up the sacrifice of praise and thanksgiving.

Then we all joined in thanks for our deliverance. Most of the day I was

90

on the bed, faint, and full of pain. At night I rose to prayers, but could not read them. I took a vomit, which gave me immediate ease, in

which I passed the rest of the night.

Mon., November 1st. In the afternoon the wind rose, and promised a storm. I endeavoured to prepare myself and companions for it. It did not fail our expectation; but was not so violent as the last. The sea broke over us every ten minutes; and the ceaseless noise of the pumps either kept off sleep, or continually interrupted it.

Tues., November 2nd. Still the poor sailors could have no respite; and as their strength abated, their murmurings increased. At night, when almost exhausted, they were relieved by a calm.

Wed., November 3rd. In the evening the wind arose again, and with that the sea, which at ten broke in through one of the dark lights, and filled the great cabin. It was vain to look for rest in such a hurricane. I waited till two in the morning for its abatement; but it continued all the following day in full majesty.

On Friday, November 5th, we met a ship bound for Boston, which had been ten weeks on her passage from Bristol, and forced in the last storm to throw most of her cargo overboard. Being short of provisions, they desired a barrel of beef, which our Captain very readily sent them, (though at the expense of much time and pains,) and a cag of rum, to encourage their sailors to pump.

The wind came fair about midnight, but soon returned to the same quarter.

Mon., November 8th. My flux returned with great violence.

Tues., November 9th. The men came down, and declared they could keep the water under no longer; it gaining upon them every moment.

Therefore they desired the Captain would be pleased to lighten the ship. He told them he knew what he had to do; bade them return to their pumping, and ordered others to take in all the sails but the mainsail. He stayed some time, (as he since told us, that he might not discourage us,) and then went up; and as we lay by stopped several leaks upon deck. This did considerable service; though it was still the constant business of four men to keep the ship from filling.

91

During this time I often threw myself upon the bed, seeking rest, but finding none. I asked of God to spare me a little, that I might recover

strength; then cast my eye upon the word: "For my name's sake will I defer mine anger; and for my praise will I refrain for thee, that I cut thee not off." (Isai. 48:9.) My soul immediately returned to its rest, and I no longer felt the continuance of the storm.

Wed., November 10th. Toward night it pleased God to abate the wind, so that I once more enjoyed the comfort of sleep.

Sat., November 13th. Never was a calm more seasonable than that which Providence this day sent us. The men were so harassed, they could work no longer; and the leaks increased so fast, that no less than their uninterrupted labour could have kept the vessel from foundering. All hands were now employed in stopping the leaks. The Captain himself told us he had been heartily frightened yesterday, with a danger he would now acquaint us with, since it was over: the total stoppage of one of the pumps. He further informed us, that he had stopped several openings in the sides of the ship, wide enough to lay his fingers in; so that he wondered the poor men had been able to keep her above water; and added, that the utmost he hoped for was, that they might hold out till they could reach some of the western islands. Just as the men had finished their work, the calm gave place to a fair wind.

Tues., November 23rd. I imparted to Mr. Zouerbuhler my intention of

discarding Appee as soon as we landed. He told me he wondered I had not done it before; for he was such a man, so unprofitable, so pernicious, that he himself would not be bound to go another voyage with him for all the world; that he was so excessively vain, he thought himself admired wherever he came; and I was so fond of him, that, for all my talk of parting, I could not live without him. He added, he was so notorious a liar, that he had long since ceased to believe one word he said; and so utterly irreligious, that it was impossible to make a friend of him. He talked so well on this subject, that I was convinced he is not the mere man of honour Appee had represented him; but has some better principle than the dream of a shadow to depend upon.

At midnight I was waked by a great uproar. So prodigious a sea broke

92

upon the ship, as filled it, and half-drowned the men upon deck; though by a particular providence none were washed overboard. The

swell lasted something longer than the rain, and high wind; and in the morning we had our fair wind again; being the twelfth day since it was first commanded to attend us.

In the afternoon we had another short but fierce blast, which brought the wind still fairer for our running into the Channel, whence all agreed we could not be far distant. At night I found Mr. Zouberbuhler

alone, who, anticipating what I intended to say, addressed me very cordially, desiring my friendship and correspondence; complained of having been linked so long to Appee, that he was become dead like him, though he had had a fear of God, and some acquaintance with Him, till this fatal voyage. He was full of care and thought about his countrymen, whether he should bring them to New-England, or Georgia. In the latter, he said, he saw little encouragement for true piety, (which many of his poor Swiss were yet possessed of,) and feared if they were settled there, they would be corrupted, like the miserable Purlsburgers. He told me, Appee had proffered, if his Spanish embassy failed, to attend him to Switzerland; but he would never more trust such a man near him, or his people: such an abominable liar, scoundrel, and thief; one who had been forced to fly his country and the pursuit of justice, for robbing his father of three hundred guineas.

A fair account of my friend Appee, - and of the twenty-four pounds I have lent him! That a Dutchman should cheat me is nothing strange: but how did he evade the wary eye of Mr. Oglethorpe Happy Miss Bovey, to be delivered by death from such a man!

On Thursday night our wind failed us. When it was first sent, we had

not, in three weeks' sailing, reached the banks of Newfoundland, which is a third part of our way: but this fortnight has almost brought us home. The next day I was perfectly satisfied in the wind's turning against us.

Sat., November 27th. Towards the evening it came fair as we could wish. Ecce ireru in Crispinus! Mr. Zouberbuhler came to me, full of abhorrence. "That Appee," said he, "is a very devil, made up of 93 falseness and lies! He is ever railing against you, behind your back, to the Captain and passengers, ridiculing the prayers, &c. He tells the Captain, (as he did everybody at Boston,) that you are so ignorant, Mr. Oglethorpe was forced to send him to take care of you. At Charlestown he declared, in all companies, he was come with full powers to put an end to the dispute between them and Georgia. Last night I overheard him giving a blessed account of you to Mr. Brig. As soon as ever I come to land I shall cast him off, and advise you to do the same: for while you suffer him near you, he will not fail to do you all the mischief he can."

Mon., November 29th. We were waked between six and seven by the Captain crying out, "Land!" It was the Lizard-Point, about a league distant. What wind there was, it was for us. I felt thankful for the divine mercies. While I was walking upon deck, Appee came up to me,

metuens tale votum ereptum a faucibus; began with many professions of friendship, hoped all little misunderstandings would be forgot; fell into familiar discourse, as formerly; was sure I should never return to Georgia; where Mr. Oglethorpe would allow none but his creatures, or such as were some way subservient to his glory: "which, take my word for it," said he, "is the principle of all his actions, as well as mine. Christianity he has about as much as myself. I have given him some unanswerable reasons against it." He was undetermined where to spend the next year, but resolved to spend it all in quest of pleasure and glory, - and confident I was just of his mind.

Wed., December 1st. The first thing I heard at day-break was the Captain in an outrageous passion; for the ship, which, according to the course he had ordered, ought to have been near the coast of France, was, through the carelessness of the Mate, just upon the land at Shoreham. He told me, that had not the day broke out as it did, the ship must have run aground; and then all the art of man could not have saved her; for we were land-locked on three sides, and had the wind right astern: so that it was with the utmost difficulty, and not till the afternoon, that we got clear. This lost us a day; for by the evening we should have reached the Downs.

Appee took me aside once more, to try his skill upon me; besought me not to alter my behaviour toward him when we should come to land;

94

denied, as ever he hoped for salvation, that he had ever spoke or wrote disrespectfully of me; detested the thought of such treachery,

with so many horrid imprecations, as I believed even a Dutchman would have trembled at. The burden of all was, John Bull and Nicholas Frog were too dear friends ever to think of parting. But John Bull begged to be excused. Though I stood in admiration of his parts, I did not choose they should be any longer exercised on me. In vain did he resume our lodging together. I was deaf on that ear, and shifted the discourse, which he still brought back again. "Well, my dear friend, wherever you are," said he, "I will take a lodging next door."

Thur., December 2nd. By four in the afternoon we came within sight of Beachy-Head; but the wind freshening, by nine we found ourselves almost unawares over against Dover. We fired a gun for a pilot, but none would come to us. We fell down into the Downs, over against Deal, and fired two more. The Captain gave us warning that he expected a pilot in an hour or two, at the farthest. I returned thanks to God for bringing us to the haven where we would be; got my few things in readiness, and laid me down, without disquiet or impatience

for two or three hours.

FRIDAY, December 3rd, 1736. At six the pilot came on board. It was with much difficulty we got down into his boat. The sea was so rough, that nothing less than our late series of deliverances could have supported our confidence. In half an hour we reached the shore. I knelt down, and blessed the Hand that had conducted me through such inextricable mazes; and desired I might give up my country again to God, when He should require.

Zouerbuhler appeared full of gratitude to God, and affection to me. We all adjourned to an inn. Zouerbuhler and I walked to bespeak a coach. I joined with the passengers in an hearty thanksgiving for our safe arrival.

Between ten and eleven we set out in the coach; and by three reached Canterbury; and by ten Sittingbourne. I had intended to lie with Zouerbuhler; but upon an intimation from him, went and lay with Appee, to hinder his having a different kind of bedfellow.

Sat., December 4th. Appee was so very grievous to us, that not only I,

95

but all the passengers, resolved this should be the last day of their acquaintance. At six in the evening we came safe to London. I

immediately took coach for Charles Rivington's, leaving my friend

Appee, who promised to come next day, and pay me what he owed me.

My namesake was much rejoiced to see me, and gave me great cause of rejoicing by his account of our Oxford friends.

Sun., December 5th. I received comfort with the sacrament at St.

Paul's; and from thence went to Mr. Towers, who received me with great affection; and heartily congratulated me on my arrival, which my friends had long despaired of. He told me the agreeable news of Mr. Oglethorpe's being expected daily.

The next I waited upon was good old Sir John Philips, who received me as one alive from the dead. Here I heard a most blessed account of our friends at Oxford; their increase, both in zeal and number. I then hastened to Mr. Vernon, to deliver my letters. He received me very affectionately, and pressed me to live with him during my stay in London.

While we were talking, young Hutton called, having traced me thither, in order to carry me home with him. We took coach for my good old friend and host, his father. I entered with fear and trembling. My reception was such as I expected from a family that entirely loved me, but had given me over for dead, and bewailed me as their own child. A Captain had told them that fifty per cent. assurance had been refused

for Indivine's ship; and a report was spread abroad that she had been seen sink to the bottom.

The motion of the stage and hackney coaches occasioned the return of my flux, which prevents my preaching or talking to my admirers.

Many such I have gained by Mr. Ingham's magnificent Journal. My brother's Journal, too, the last I hope will ever be sent hither,) is in every one's hands. Libent modo vivere, fient, Fient ista palam, cupient et in acta referri.

Mon., December 6th. I spent an hour at my uncle's, equally welcome and unexpected. They informed me my brother Hall was gone to a curacy, very melancholy, and impatient at the mention of Georgia; and

96

that my sister Kezzy was gone to live with him. The bird will play with the snake, and the lambs with the tiger.

I waited upon Mr. Hutchinson, who soon fell upon the controverted points. Here also I had an invitation to make his house my home.

Tues., December 7th. I called in the morning on Charles Rivington, who gave me letters and a Journal from my brother in Georgia. After leaving my Secretary's book with Mr. Towers, I waited upon the Bishop of London.

In the ante-chamber I began his Journal, and read it through without

either surprise or impatience. His dropping my fatal letter, I hope will convince him of what I never could, - his own great carelessness; and the sufferings that brought upon him, of his inimitable blindness. His simplicity in telling what and who were meant by the two Greek words, was "outdoing his own outdoings." Surely all this will be sufficient to teach him a little of the wisdom of the serpent, of which he seems as utterly void, as his dear friend Mrs. H. is of the innocence of the dove.

In the midst of these reflections I was called in, to deliver my letters. His Lordship desired me to come next morning, having much to say to me. I drove to Colonel Bladen, who was from home: then to Mr. Pendarvis's, where we passed an agreeable hour, in mutual accounts of our friends in England and America.

I returned to Mr. Hutton, where Dr. Hales, one of our Trustees, came to see me. Much discourse we had of Georgia, particularly of Miss Bovey's death, and my brother's persecutions among that stiff-necked people. He seems a truly pious, humble Christian, full of zeal for God, and love to man.

Wed., December 8th. I waited on Colonel Bladen; and then on the Bishop, who asked abundance of curious questions, not worth

remembering.

In the evening I obeyed a summons from my Lord Egmont, and gave him, as I did all I came to the speech of, a true account of the case between Georgia and Carolina.

97

Thur., December 9th. I called on Mr. Towers, who desired me by all means to go home, and keep there, whoever sent for me; promising, if

he had any business, he would come to me. I took his advice, and kept my chamber some days, which, with Dr. Cockburn's electuary, almost perfectly recovered me.

Sat., December 11th. Mr. Brig and Cutler called, and informed me Captain Corney was heartily frightened by hearing on all sides Appee's real character; that he gave over for lost the money he had lent him, as well as that for passage and provisions.

Contrary to my Doctor's advice, I ventured out, Sunday, December 12th, to the sacrament in Duke-street. Mrs. Rhodes challenged me after the service with, "I am glad to see you. I hope you go back again to Georgia."

In the evening a multitude came, and went; most to inquire of their friends or relations in Georgia. I sent them away advocates for the colony.

Wed., December 15th. About noon I waited upon the Trustees, at the office. It put me past all patience to hear they were reading Mr. Ingham's and my brother's Journals. I was called in, and delivered my letters for the Trustees. Lord Carpenter, being in the chair, desired me to speak that all the gentlemen might hear me. Mr. Towers interposed, and told them I was so weakened by my illness, that I could not speak aloud; and desired me to deliver my papers one by one, to be read by Mr. Virelst. At dinner they fell into discourse about the Missioners, whom as yet they mightily commend, and wish for more of them; as that their Journals might be forthwith printed, that the world might receive the benefit of their labours.

Thur., December 16th. I was extremely sick in the night, and by morning my flux returned.

Sat., December 18th. I began my twenty-seventh year in a murmuring, discontented spirit; reading over and over the third of Job.

Tues., December 21st. I dined at my uncle's, who bestowed abundance of wit on my brother, and his apostolical project. He told me, the French, if they had any remarkably dull fellow among them, sent him

98

to convert the Indians. I checked his eloquence by those lines of my brother: -

"To distant realms the' Apostle need not roam,
Darkness, alas! and Heathens are at home."

He made no reply; and I heard no more of my brother's apostleship.

Wed., December 22nd. I received a letter from Mr. Whitefield, offering himself to go to Georgia.

Thur., December 23rd. I had a long conference with Lord Fitzwalter concerning Georgia. In the afternoon my old Captain's owners came to desire me to testify the treatment I had received, for which reason I would not proceed [to England] with Indivine. This I promised with Zouberbuhler, if there should be occasion.

Sun., December 26th. I called upon my Doctor, and was well chid for so doing. He told me that if I had not had a constitution of iron, I could not have held out so long; that he could do nothing for me, unless I would keep my chamber; through want of which I had undone all he had been doing, and had all to begin anew.

Wed., December 29th. I called on Zouberbuhler, who gave me the poor Purlsburgers' case to read; an eternal monument of Carolina's infamous breach of faith. Soon after Mr. Lynn, his landlord, came in, and entertained us with some of Mr. Appee's adventures; who, when he came from Surinam, where he had gained away a plantation his

father gave him, was reduced to the last extremity, and taken in, naked and starving, by one Mr. Legg, who was quickly forced to turn him out again, for offering violence to a lady in her family. Cedite Germani latrones, cedite Galli.

He has not studied Gil Bias for nothing (his inseparable companion throughout our voyage). As to his boasts, a specimen Mr. Lynn helped me to, may serve for all. "I wish that dear man, Mr. Oglethorpe, would return. I am impatient to see him: but he is even with me. How would he throw open his arms to embrace me! We were always like two brothers. He could never be without me.

99

We were constant bedfellows. Many an expedition have we made together; though, in faith, I had work enough of it as his Secretary. What belonged to one, belonged to the other. He took a fancy to a gold watch of mine. I gave it him that instant. It cost me indeed twenty guineas; but that is a trifle between friends."

Thur., December 30th. I waited upon the Bishop of London for some papers I had left with him, concerning the state of the colony. Some effect they seemed to have had; for he appeared less reserved than I have ever seen him. I took the opportunity to recommend Mr.

Chicheley for orders; and he said, "He should give in his name to the Society, in the list of Missionaries."

100

January 3 - April 30, 1737

Mon., January 3rd, 1737. In the evening Mr. Zouberbuhler brought Captain Corney to see me; from whom I received the following narration:- "I was walking with an officer last night, when, in the Strand, I met Mr. Appee; the gentleman I had been two days in quest of. I let him pass, to try if he would take any notice of me; but finding he would not, I called after him. He turned, ran to me, and embraced me with,-

"APPEE. - 'Dear Captain Corney, I am overjoyed to see you. It is my great misfortune that I could not do it sooner; but I have been so extremely ill, and have such a multitude of business upon my hands, and of such consequence, as made it impossible.'

"CAPTAIN.-'I did hope indeed to have seen you in these three weeks.'

"A. - 'But, dear Sir, you cannot conceive the load I have had upon me! What endless business of this Georgia! and all at this end of the town.'

"C. - 'Well, since I have had the good fortune to meet you at last, we must take a glass of wine together.'

"A. - 'That would be to me the greatest pleasure in life; but I am going home in all haste to dress, being forced abroad by business of the last importance.'

"C. - 'Nay, but you shall bestow one half-hour upon me and my friend, since we have had the happiness of meeting you.'" With much ado he got him into the next tavern, and after some indifferent questions mentioned his promise to freight the ship, "which is now clear," said he, "and ready for the Georgia passengers."

"A. - 'That is the very thing I wanted to talk with you about. I look for Mr. Oglethorpe every hour; and as soon as ever he arrives, the business shall be done. You may depend upon it; for I can do anything with him.'

"C. - 'Sir, I am infinitely obliged to you; but in the mean while I must pay off my men, and re-fit my ship, which you know has suffered much in the passage. This will stand me in a good deal of money; and

101

therefore I should be glad to settle that small account betwixt us.'

"A. - 'It was the very thing I was just going to mention, - though it grieves me too, - surely I am the most unfortunate man breathing! Such disappointments and losses on all hands since my arrival! -my father's failing! my mother's death! my dear friend Mr. Oglethorpe's

delay! -that really I am afraid it will be some days before I pay you."

The Captain tried some time if he could not recover his money; but finding nothing was to be got by fair means, at last told the officer, that was the man; and bade him do his duty. Appee started up and cried, "I hope, Captain, you are not in earnest! He is not really an officer!"

"Hands spake for Casca;" and the catchpole told him he was his prisoner; offering to read him his writ. Appee declined it, telling him he understood those things; and immediately fell to his entreaties; told the Captain what an esteem he had for him; how he had everywhere extolled his honour, his good nature, and generosity; conjured him by their past friendship to release him directly,"

otherwise" says he, "Mr. Wesley will hear of it, and bring his action for his money, which, with your debt, is all I owe in the world."

The Captain replied, he had no intention to hurt him, but only to get his own money; (a mere trifle for Mr. Oglethorpe's Secretary to pay!) or, to be sure, his father would lay it down for him, the moment he heard of his confinement.

"A. - 'I assure you, Captain, if one shilling would set me free, I have not a relation in the world that would advance it for me.'

"C. - 'Why, then, I find you have behaved yourself as scurvily toward them as you have toward me. In the ship you was an agent, a secretary,

a statesman; but on shore I perceive you are a bite, and a scoundrel;
and as such I will use you.'

"A. - 'For God's sake, dear Captain, have pity upon me. I will give you all I have; five pounds in money, my clothes, watch, buckles, sword, snuff-box, and hat.

"C. - 'Sir, I scorn to take a gentleman's clothes; for such you passed upon me: and had you sent me a single line, with, Here are three or four guineas for you, Corney and I will pay the rest when I am able, I

102

would never have given you or myself any farther trouble about it. But your design, from the beginning, was to cheat me; and I shall therefore make an example of you. In Boston, when I would have had you lay in less wine, you told me, What signified forty pounds New-England money. Truly not much to you, who intended me to pay it. But how could you be so base, when I had laid in your provisions, and lent you money, to rob me of the three pounds for the letters?' His answer to the last indictment was plainly,

"A. - 'Necessity has no law.'

"C. - 'None but an experienced rogue could have made such an answer. You thought me a soft, silly fellow, and was therefore resolved to skin me: but now you shall answer for all.'

"A. - 'Have patience with me till Mr. Oglethorpe comes; you shall then have your freight of passengers, and money both. You may be sure of it; for I can have of him what money I please.'

"C. - 'I do not believe a word of it. Did Mr. Oglethorpe see you in a gaol, he would leave you there to condign punishment.'

"A. - 'O, how can you think so, when I have so often told you how intimate we are, and on what important affairs he sent me to England? It is not my liberty I value; for that he will restore me to, the moment he hears of my confinement; but I fear I shall lose his good opinion.'

"C. - 'I do not believe you ever had it; or that he sent you hither for any other reason, but to get rid of a vagrant, that would else corrupt his colony. If you can pay me my money, do; or I must leave you to justice.'

A. - 'Take my clothes in part of payment. I will give you my note for the remainder of the debt'

"C. - 'Would you give me your note for the whole twenty-two pounds, I would sell it the first man that would give me sixpence for it.'"

The Captain continuing inexorable, Appee cried like a child: upon which he asked him how he could behave so abjectly, who had scorned on board to own himself in any danger, (as soon as it was past,) "when I myself," said he, "had little hopes of our escaping"

"A. - 'O, Sir, imprisonment, or death itself, is nothing to me; but the loss of so dear a friend as Mr. Oglethorpe this is what sits so heavy at my heart. But I hope you will not be so cruel as to rob me of him.'

"C. - 'I shall be so just to myself, and the world, as to expose a common cheat, who lives upon the public, and lays all honest men, that do not know him, under contribution.'"

Saturday following the Captain was prevailed upon by a friend of Appee, (now in Newgate,) to go hear if he had anything farther to propose. He began very oratorically; could not blame the Captain for what he had done, but forgave him from his heart, and had still the utmost esteem and affection for him: always said, "Captain Corney was a good-natured man, and a gentleman;" was sure, therefore, he would not ruin a poor young fellow, who was rising in the world, and on the very point of making his fortune. He then began casting up the worth of his snuff-box, &c. His sword he valued at seven pounds, his bureau at four.

"C. - 'That bureau, Mr. Wesley told me, was a lady's in London.'

"A. - 'Why, that is very true. I had really forgot it. However, a guinea I may ask her for the freight.'

"C. - 'Sir, you talk like what you are. I expected when you sent for me, your father had supplied you with money to pay me.'

"A. - 'I assure you, once more, was I now going to be hanged, my father would not give a single shilling to save me from the gallows.'

"C. - 'You give a fine account of yourself, and perfectly consistent with that you gave at Boston. Is it fit that such an one as you should be suffered any longer to impose upon honest people. It is well you are at the end of your rogueries.'

"A. - 'I had a suspicion that you had laid a trap for me at Zouberbuhler's; but I was too wise to be caught there.'

"C. - 'It is full as well that I have caught you here. You have been so ungrateful a scoundrel to me, that I was resolved to spend a little more money upon you.'

104

"A. - 'I deserve it for a blockhead as I am, for not putting myself, as I intended, under the court of the green cloth.'

"C. - 'Why, what a precious rogue you describe yourself! Can you, after this, expect any favour from me. '

"A. - 'I hope you will not take it ill, if I take the benefit of the Act, through which I can come out next term.'

"C. - 'O, not at all, Sir. Take the benefit of the Act, by all means. I would do so myself, was I in your place. But when you are ready to come out, I will give you your keeping there for one half-year longer.'"

Here Appee's friend, Mr. Joy, told him," You have used the Captain so

villanously, that I am ashamed to have had any dealings with you. I cannot say one word against his resolution; and desire you would never send or write to me again, or to any of your friends; for we wash our hands of you, and from this hour shall think of you no more."

With this speech he left him, and, walking with the Captain, observed, what a poor unhappy young fellow he was. "That shipwreck of his, in particular, was as unfortunate an accident as one shall hear of." "What shipwreck" says the Captain. "Why, in his passage from Carolina. Have not you heard of it" "No," replied he, "nor anybody else." "He told me,"

says Joy, "that the ship ran upon the rocks, and all the men were lost, but the Boatswain, a boy, and himself; that as he clung upon the rock, a sea came, and washed him off, dashing him upon another rock, with such violence, that it broke his skull, a tooth, and three of his ribs; so that it cost him no less than ten guineas to the surgeon."

This account I made the Captain repeat two or three times, and took it down from him in shorthand. I asked what gave him the first suspicion of Appee's knavery. He answered, that when the searchers had opened his bureau, he saw several letters Appee had broke open, and a memorandum of nine hundred pounds currency he had taken up at Charlestown, upon (as he suspected) a forged bill of exchange. Fri., January 7th. The news was brought of Mr. Oglethorpe's arrival.

The next day I waited on him, and received a relation of his wonderful deliverance in the Bristol Channel. The people of Carolina, he told me, were quite mad, had hired men to murder the Indians, - the Spaniards,

105

- had burned Augusta, &c. He then inquired about Appee. I gave him some little account of his misbehaviour, together with an extract of my

Journal. He seemed sorry he had ever employed him; talked admirably of resignation; and the impossibility of dying when it is not best.

Sun., January 9th. I saw him again with Mr. Towers. He told me he had read my Journal, which was writ with a great deal of spirit. I replied, all I could answer for was, that it was writ with a great deal of truth.

Thur., January 13th. I met Mr. Getshorn at Mr. Oglethorpe's. He told me of Appee's cheating D_____, a poor drunken P_____, of his gold watch.

Mr. Oglethorpe acquainted me, that he had been sent to again by Appee, in Newgate. Upon my expressing pity for him, he added, "I can do nothing. He has tied my hands. If I released him, it would confirm all his lies. We are such dear friends, that I must even leave him where he is."

Wed., January 19th. Count Zinzendorf, just arrived from Germany, sent for me. When I came, he saluted me with all possible affection, and made me promise to call every day. From him I went to the Bishop of

Oxford, where I met with an equally kind reception. He desired me to come as often as I could, without farther ceremony or invitation.

We had much talk of the state of religion, and of Count Zinzendorf's intended visit. Their Bishops he acknowledged to have the true succession.

Thur., January 20th. I wrote and delivered my own state in a letter to the Count. He sent me to Mr. Oglethorpe, who talked much of the mischief of private journals, all which ought to be published, or never sent. A letter from my brother he read; and argued, I could not but think the writer much too free, too bold, too credulous.

Sat., January 22nd. I called upon Mrs. Pendarvis, while she was reading a letter of my being dead. Happy for me, had the news been true! What a world of misery would it save me! In the afternoon I was overjoyed to meet at M. Essen's my old friend M.G..

Sun., January 23rd. I met Bishop Nitschman at the Count's, and was introduced to the Countess: a woman of great seriousness and sweetness. I was present at their public service, and thought myself in

106

a quire of angels.

Tues., January 25th. I paid a visit to Dr. Hales, in the country.

Wed., January 26th. We took a walk to see Mr. Pope's house and gardens; justly called a burlesque upon human greatness. I was sensibly affected with the plain Latin sentence upon the obelisk, in memory of his mother: Ah, Editha! matrum optima, mulierum amantissima, vale! How far superior to the most laboured elegy that he, or Prior himself, could have composed!

Sun., January 30th. At St. Martin's I heard an excellent sermon by Dr. Trapp, on, "In your patience possess ye (or be ye master of) your souls;" proving the miserable slavery of the passions.

Tues., February 1st. I was again with the Bishop of Oxford, and told him the Bishop of London had declined having anything to do with Georgia; and said it belonged to the Archbishop only to unite the Moravians with us. He replied, it was the Bishop of London's proper office; but bade me assure the Count, we should acknowledge the Moravians as our brethren, and one Church with our own.

Wed., February 2nd. Mr. Oglethorpe told me, Appee, released from prison, desired to meet me at his house. The next morning I waited there some hours, to confront him; but no Appee appeared.

At nine I was with the Count, who seemed resolved to carry his people from Georgia, if they might not be permitted to preach to the Indians.

He much pressed me to go with him to Germany; which I am very willing to do, if I can get clear of the Trustees.

Sun., February 6th. I had much conversation with the Count. Some of his words were, "The Christian cannot yield to sin; cannot long fight against it; but must conquer it, if he will." Speaking of his own case, he said, he and a lady were in love with each other; till, finding something of nature, he resolved to renounce her; which he did, and persuaded her to accept of his friend. "From that moment," said he, "I was freed from all self-seeking, so that for ten years past I have not done my own will in anything, great or small. My own will is hell to me. I can just now renounce my dearest friend, without the least reluctance, if God require it." He kissed and blessed me at parting.

107

Mon., February 7th. Before I set out for Oxford I called upon the Count, and desired his prayers. He commended himself to our friends there; and promised, if any of them would write to him, or the Brethren, they would answer them.

Tues., February 8th. I came to Oxford, and took up my lodgings with Mr. Sarney. In the evening I met and encouraged our friends by the Count's and the Moravians' example. Mr. Kinchin I found changed into a courageous soldier of Christ. I read them my brother's Journal.

Wed., February 9th. I met and accompanied my friend Horne to the Convocation, where we carried the election (I came down about) for Mr. Bromley, our old member, three hundred and thirty-nine, against one hundred and twenty-six.

I visited my old friends at the castle, and found honest Thomas Waite still a prisoner there. Mrs. Topping was gone where the prisoners rest together, and hear not the voice of the oppressor. Returning, I called at the Blue Posts, and found my old pupil, Robert Kirkham. We spent the evening, as before, in mutual exhortation.

Thur., February 10th. I talked with some of my old proselytes in College: paid my respects to the Dean, and met with a sharp expostulation for voting against him (as he called it). In an hour we came to a right understanding, and parted friends.

I dined with Mr. Woods, of Abingdon: the same kind friendly man he was. In the evening I saw Mr. Carter and Banny Kirkham, and laboured to awaken one, and confirm the other. At Mr. Sarney's I found good Mr. Gainbold, and Kinchin.

Fri., February 11th. I exhorted poor languid Smith, and then Carter, to resume all their rules of holy living. In the afternoon I was with the Rector of Lincoln, who received me very affectionately.

Sat., February 12th. By nine at night I got back to the Count in London; and consulted him about my journey to Germany.

Tues., February 16th. I told Mr. Oglethorpe of my desire of returning with him to Georgia, if I could be of any use there as a Clergyman; but as to my Secretary's place, I begged him to tell me where, when, and

108

how, I should resign it. He bade me think what I did; and when I had well considered the matter, he would talk with me farther.

Fri., February 18th. In walking to St. Martin's, I met my dearest friend Appee, who accosted me with inimitable assurance, and asked where he might meet me. I appointed Mr. Oglethorpe's, the next morning.

Sat., February 19th. I waited on Mr. Oglethorpe, with no great expectation of Appee. He was too wary to keep his appointment.

Sun., February 20th. Being to set out the next day for Tiverton, I went to take my leave of the Count, who invited me again to Germany, bade me not despair, and dismissed me with his blessing. My last words were, Peace be with you: to which he replied, And with your spirit.

Mon., February 21st. I came in the coach to Reading; and the next evening to Marlborough, where I found horses my brother Hall had sent to bring me to Wootton. With him and my sisters, Patt and Kez, I stayed till

Mon., February 28th; and then took horse for Bath; the next day I got to Wellington; and,

Wed., March 2nd, in the morning reached Tiverton. I ran up stairs to my sister, who received me with tears of joy. I saw Phill next, and last my brother, who seemed at least as well as when he left me at London, three years before. I went to comfort my mother, indisposed in her chamber.

Tues., March 8th. I took horse, and on Thursday afternoon got back again to Wootton.

Tues., March 1st. I set out for London, in the Marlborough coach, which had been robbed morning and evening, for four days before.

This fifth morning we passed unmolested. Scarce was I got to town, when they fell to robbing again.

Thur., March 17th. At Mrs. Pendarvis's I found M.G., and her brother, who pressed me to bear him company to Mickleton.

Tues., March 22nd. I set out at three in the Oxford coach with Mr. Gr., and his sister, and Mr. Dews.

109

Wed., March 23rd. I was much moved at hearing Mr. Gambold's history of my brother.

Thur., March 24th. Our company set out again for Mickleton; which we

reached by night. We passed the time agreeably enough in walking, conversing, and reading.

Wed., March 30th. I rode over to Stanton, where they were all overjoyed to see me; especially my first of friends, Varanes.

Wed., April 6th. I had some conversation with M.G. about the fewness of those that are saved. How little is she advanced in the school of Christ, who is not convinced of this truth!

Sat., April 9th. In the evening I had the satisfaction of seeing Mr. Gr. much affected with a chapter he had been reading of Mr. Law. He desired his sister might hear it. I read it a second time, and took that opportunity of pressing upon him a daily retirement.

Thur., April 28th. I took horse with Mr. Gr. and Dews. The former left us at Compton, and we rode on towards Spilsbury.

Sat., April 30th. I got back to Mr. Sarney's, weary and faint, and in a fever, through want of sleep.

May 2 - August 31, 1737

Mon., May 2nd. Between one and two in the morning, I betook myself to my usual bed, the floor. Charles Gr. breakfasted with me, and owned with tears, he had never felt any true joy but in religion. I earnestly recommended Law to him.

At noon I visited Mr. Gainbold, right glad to see me. I found him much cheerfuller than usual: his sister just the same. In the afternoon I talked with the prisoners; very attentive: with the Dean; very kind and friendly.

Tues., May 3rd. At two Mr. Sarney rose to pray for me. I rose too, and set out for London, which I reached in a few hours.

Thur., May 5th. I met Virelst and Counsel at Mr. Oglethorpe's, about the hearing they are shortly to have before the Board of Trade. When they

110

were gone, Mr. Oglethorpe said, if the Government had dropped Georgia, he would not let the poor people perish, but sell his estate, which he could do for 45,000, and support them upon the interest.

Fri., May 20th. At her desire, I waited upon Lady Betty Hastings. Her inquiries about Georgia were interrupted by the Bishop of Gloucester's coming.

Sat., May 21st. I rode out of town to meet my brother and sister from Tiverton, and attended them to Mr. Powel's.

Mon., May 30th. I carried my brother to the good Archbishop, who received us very kindly.

Wed., June 1st. I accepted an invitation from Mrs. Benson, and rode

down to Cheshunt Nunnery. Miss Kitty and Mrs. Johnson were there before me. I was much delighted both with the place and company. After dinner I missed my letter-book, and rode back to town, seeking it in vain. By seven next morning I was at the Nunnery again; and returned to London in the afternoon.

Fri., June 3rd. Between six and seven this evening I took horse for Cheshunt, eighteen miles from London; got there by nine; and the next morning rode eighteen miles farther, to Hatfield, to see my sister Nancy. In the afternoon I returned to the Nunnery.

Trinity Sunday, June 5th. We all went in an hired coach to Warmley; where I preached "Few saved;" and was pleased to see the family stay the unexpected sacrament. In the evening I rode back to town.

Mon., June 6th. At ten we were again before the Board of Trade. Till twelve Carolina side was heard. Then our Counsel (confused enough) was heard for Georgia.

Wed., June 8th. I made affidavit in Chancery-Lane, as to what I knew relating to Georgia. At one I called upon my uncle, and found him exceeding ill.

Thur., June 9th. At the Board, part of our Charter and Acts were read, &c. I declared upon oath, that all the traders licensed were supposed to be within Georgia. After my affidavit was read, Murray made our

defence; but so little to Mr. Oglethorpe's satisfaction, that he started up, and ran out. I dined with my brother at Lord Oxford's. Lady

Oxford, Lord Duplin, and the famed Lady Mary, were of the company.

Sat., June 11th. I found my uncle dying. He pressed my hand, showed much natural affection, and bade me give his love to his sister. I spent the evening at Cheshunt, in reading Mr. Law to the family,-my usual employment there.

Sunday evening. I heard that my uncle died, a little after I left him.

Mon., June 13th. I waited on my brother and sister a little way on their road to Tiverton. On Wednesday I breakfasted at the Nunnery. On Thursday night I attended my uncle to his grave.

Fri., June 17th. I heard the last of my friend Appee's adventures here, from one Mr. Laba, a cutler; from whom he had just stole a watch, and run away with it to Paris.

Sat., June 18th. I was before the Board of Trade for the last time, to hear Carolina's reply to Georgia. I spent the rest of the month between Cheshunt and Hatfield.

Sat., July 2nd. I was at the Nunnery; and the next day preached at Hatfield. I slept at Cheshunt.

Mon., July 4th. In the evening I set out for Oxford. I came thither the

next day, where James Hutton had got before me. In the evening young Gr. came to me at Sathey's, in an excellent temper. I encouraged him to go on in the narrow way; and strongly recommended stated hours of retirement.

Thur., July 7th. I pressed the same upon poor Smith, in our walk to Mr. Gainbold's, where I found my sister Kezzy. I got back to dinner with Lady Cox and her sisters. In the evening Gr. told me, that on this day he first felt the beginnings of the change; and was convinced of the reality of what he only believed before upon my brother's and my testimony. He appeared full of joy and love.

Sat., July 9th. I set out with James, for Wootton. Quite spent, I laid me down, and slept for a quarter of an hour upon the ground. By two we

112

reached Marlborough, and by four, Wootton. My mother was lately come thither from Tiverton.

Mon., July 11th. Meeting Ch. at Bath, we could get no farther. He carried us to see the quarries; where I narrowly missed being dashed to pieces. On Wednesday, July 13th, we came safe to Tiverton.

Sat, July 23rd, and Sun., 24th, at Wootton. Days never to be forgot!

Mon., July 25th. I heard at Oxford that Charles Graves had been carried away by his friends, as stark mad.

Thur., July 28th. I spied Robinson and Bateley in the long-walk, and crossed over to speak with them. They fell upon me unawares, desiring me to take some of the Cowley saints to Georgia; charged the Methodists with intrusion, schism, and bringing neglect upon the ministry. We differed absolutely. I left them with, "Remember, you will be of my mind when you come to die."

Fri., July 29th. We set out for London, with Mr. Morgan and Mr. Kinchin; and on

Sat., July 30th, finished our travels at College-street, where I had the satisfaction of finding my old hearty friend, Benjamin Ingham.

Mon., August 1st. I read Mr. Oglethorpe my brother's letter to the Trustees, charging Horton with raising a scandalous report about me. He would not advise one way or the other: which I interpreted as a dissuasive, and therefore took no farther notice of the matter.

Wed., August 17th. After spending some time at Hatfield, I set out with my brother Lambert, for London. At Epping he went back, full of good resolutions.

Thur., August 18th. Hearing that Mrs. Delamotte was now in town, I went to see her. We fell into discourse upon resignation; and she seemed resolved to acquiesce in the will of God, detaining her Isaac

from her.

Sun., August 21st. I took horse again for Hatfield; read prayers, and preached at Wormley; called on Dr. Nichols, and rode on. My brother I left on the 24th, in excellent temper. I called and dined at Dr. Newton's.

113

Thur., August 25th. After giving the sacrament to a sick woman, I breakfasted with Mr. Chadwick. We had some close talk about the new birth, with which he was greatly moved. I took the opportunity of recommending regular retirement, and religious acquaintance. I preached at Ludgate, dined with M. Musgrave, and called in the afternoon at Mrs. Delamotte's. The Cambridge youth was there; but we had no very useful conversation.

Fri., August 26th. I waited upon His Majesty at Hampton Court, with the Oxford Address, by the advice of Mr. Potter. The Archbishop told me he was glad to see me there. We kissed their Majesties' hands, and were invited to dinner. I left that, and the company, and hasted back to town. The next day we waited upon His Royal Highness, and dined all together at St. James's.

Wed., August 31st. I talked at large upon my state with Mr. Law, at Putney. The sum of his advice was, "Renounce yourself; and be not impatient."

September 9 - December 31, 1737

Fri., September 9th. I consulted Mr. Law a second time, and asked him several questions: "With what comment shall I read the Scriptures?"

"None." "What do you think of one who dies unrenewed, while endeavouring after it?" "It concerns neither you to ask, nor me to answer." "Shall I write once more to such a person?" "No." "But I am persuaded it will do him good." "Sir, I have told you my opinion." "Shall I write to you?" "Nothing I can either speak or write, will do you any good."

Sat., September 10th. Calling at Mr. Delamotte's, I found Miss Hetty there, and gave her her brother's letter. We soon fell into talk about the new birth. She lamented her not being acquainted with me sooner; and that she could not be in the country now I was going thither. I walked back to Charles Rivington's, and fetched her Mr. Law; and then took coach for Eltham and Blendon. My friend Benjamin had been there before me, and met with such a reception as encouraged me to follow. He had preached to them with power; and still more powerfully by his life and conversation. The eldest sister, and

114

Cambridge scholar, were struck to the heart. The first evening passed in discourse of my namesake in America.

Sun., September 11th. I preached the one thing needful: had some

serious talk with Miss Betsy, and read to Mrs. Delamotte part of my Journal, relating to their intended visitant, Appee.

Mon., September 12th. I returned to town, and spent an hour with Hetty, in discoursing on the inward change, and reading Law. She received all his sayings with the utmost readiness.

Tues., September 13th. I went again to my simple Hetty, to learn some of her humility. Her convictions were much deepened by my reading the Life of God in the Soul of Man. I took my leave, and set out for Oxford, by way of Windsor, and Mr. Thorold's.

Thur., September 15th. I rose (at Sarney's) with earnest desires of resigning myself up entirely to God. I had the satisfaction of seeing an excellent letter from young Gr. in the country.

Fri., September 16th. I walked over with Mr. Gainbold to Stantonarcourt. After much talk of their states, we agreed, that I should not speak at all to my sister on religion, but fully to his.

Calling accidentally in the evening at my sister Kezia's room, she fell upon my neck, and in a flood of tears begged me to pray for her. Seeing her so softened, I did not know but this might be her time, and sat down. She anticipated me, by saying she had felt here what she never felt before, and believed now there was such a thing as the new

creature. She was full of earnest wishes for divine love; owned there was a depth in religion she had never fathomed; that she was not, but longed to be, converted; would give up all to obtain the love of God '. renewed her request with great vehemence that I would pray for her; often repeating, "I am weak, I am exceeding weak." I prayed over her, and blessed God from my heart; then used Pascal's prayer for conversion, with which she was much affected, and begged me to write it out for her. After supper, (at which I could not eat for joy,) I read Mr. Law's account of Redemption. She was greatly moved, full of tears and sighs, and eagerness for more. Poor Mrs. Gainbold was quite unaffected: her time being not yet come.

115

Sat., September 17th. I prayed with Kez., still in the same temper; convinced all her misery had proceeded from her not loving God.

This morning Mr. Wells, of Jesus College, came in. I took occasion to mention Mr. Law on the Redemption; read part of it, and rejoiced in his so cordially joining us.

Sun., September 18th. I preached at the Castle, and gave the sacrament to threescore communicants. In the afternoon at Stantonarcourt. I was continually called upon by Kez., to pray with her. We supped at Mr. Bonnel's.

Wed., September 21st. I rejoiced to hear at Oxford, that Graves was returned from his friends unshaken. At night he came in, (to Sarney's,) fell upon my neck, and burst into tears. It is hard to say, whether his friends' hatred, or his love, of me exceeds.

Thur., September 22nd. I breakfasted with Mr. Rock at Nuneham; and dined at Maple-Durham with Mr. Burton. Next morning I got to Mr. Thorold's, at Windsor; and in two hours to London. But my hard riding had nearly occasioned my being apprehended for an highwayman.

Sat., September 24th. At twelve I set out for Blendon. Passing Mr. Delamotte's, I was minded to call, though they were all out of town. Contrary to my expectation, I found Hetty left behind. We passed two hours in conference and prayer. Two hours afterwards I was with her again, and read Scougal on "Few saved." She was quite melted down, and, after a prayer for love, said, "God knows my heart: I do desire nothing but Him."

Sun., September 25th. I met her at the sacrament in Crooked-Lane; and endeavoured to prepare her for persecution, which all must suffer who will live godly in Christ Jesus.

Tues., September 27th. I rode to Windsor; and next day to

Mapleurham by noon. An hour after I took horse, and quickly lost myself in a wood: but by breaking fences, and leaping ditches, got at last to Dorchester. I lost myself again between that and Nunchain; but soon recovered it, and by night came to honest Mr. Sarney's.

116

Thur., September 29th. I found Graves and Kezzy still pressing forward. In the afternoon I met Mr. Wells alone, and had some close talk with him upon the new birth, self-renunciation, &c. He confessed reputation was his idol; rejected his own righteousness: convinced, but fearful: longing to break loose. I went with him to the chapel; and afterwards resumed the subject. He seemed on the brink of the new birth.

Sat., October 1st. I prayed by Mr. Carter, who lay a-dying: and by Mrs. Sarney, in the same condition.

Sun., October 2nd. I carried Graves to Stanton-Harcourt, where I gave the sacrament, and then preached at Southleigh. In the evening we returned to Oxford.

Mon., October 3rd. At six I took horse for Barkswell. A little on this side Banbury my horse threw me, with great violence, over his head, and tumbled after, but not upon me. I rose first, unhurt, except that I sprained my leg. With much wandering through excessive bad roads,

by night I got to Mr. Boys's, quite exhausted.

Tues., October 4th. I waked much refreshed. The family showed me all possible civility, especially dear Susan, for whose sake I had come.

Wed., October 5th. We parted as friends should part. I returned, before night, to Oxford.

Fri., October 7th. I received a letter from James Hutton, summoning me on board in fourteen days.

Sat., October 8th. I endeavoured to fix Kinchin, Sarney, Washington, and Hutchins, in meeting as my brother, &c., used formerly. I rode to Spilsbury, to see my old friend Horn, and returned by night to read Nicodemus at Queen's.

Sun., October 9th. I gave the sacrament and preached at Southleigh. In the evening at dear Charles's; still growing in humility and love.

Mon., October 10th. Being determined not to leave England till I had come to a full explanation with Dicky Graves, this morning I went to his rooms; talked the whole matter over, and were both entirely

117

satisfied. Then I spoke of my making his brother Charles mad; hoped he himself would be one of those whose life fools count madness;

explained the nature of true religion; "no other than what you once

laboured after, till the gentleman swallowed up the Christian." He was

greatly moved; complained he could not pray. I appealed to him, whether he had not formerly felt more solid pleasure in religion, than in all the caresses of the world. He confessed it, and resolved to return. I earnestly recommended Law, and daily retirement, as my last legacy. "My heart's desire to God for you is, that you may be saved. In a little time, all I can do will be to pray for you: and I hope you will now pray for me, as for a friend, not an enemy." He answered, "That I shall do heartily. I am satisfied you are my sincere friend." We then kissed, and parted - till that day.

Tues., October 11th. I set out for London. In a mile's riding my horse fell lame. I sung the 91st Psalm, and put myself under the divine protection. I had scarce ended, and turned the hut, on Shotover-Hill, when a man came up to me, and demanded my money, showing, but not presenting, a pistol. I gave him my purse. He asked how much there was. "About thirty shillings." "Have you no more?" "I will see;" put my hand in my pocket, and gave him some halfpence. He repeated the question, "Have you no more?" I had thirty pounds in a private pocket; bade him search himself; which he did not choose. He ordered me to dismount, which I did; but begged hard for my horse again, promising not to pursue him. He took my word, and restored him. I rode gently on, praising God. My bags, and watch, and gold, the robber

was forced to leave me. By the evening I reached Westminster.

Fri., October 14th. I was informed at the office, that I was to go in three weeks with the Lieutenant-Colonel by way of Gibraltar.

Sun., October 16th. I rode to Blendon, and read S.S. to the two sisters, and prayed with them for conversion. I was employed again in like manner, after the opposers were gone to bed.

Tues., October 18th. Jacky Delamotte and I took horse. Mine fell into a hole; but I kept my seat. His followed, and flung him over his head. Neither was hurt.

Fri., October 28th. I found Miss Betty at Fresh Wharf, and spent an

118

hour or two with her and Jacky. Next morning I was with her alone, and spoke largely of the danger of lukewarmness, and resting in negative goodness. I never saw her so moved before.

Sun., October 30th. I waked them at five, and attended them to Forster-Lane, where we heard Mr. Whitefield, and communicated together. I preached at St. Helen's "the one thing needful." In the afternoon I carried her and her brother to Mr. Chadwick's, (my usual lodgings,) and thence to Ironmonger's-Lane. After preaching the same sermon here, we drank tea at Mr. Chadwick's, and then took coach for College-Street. They were much delighted with the singing there, and

edified, I hope, by George Whitefield's example. It was near eleven before I left them at their own house.

Wed., November 2nd. I was at the office, and returned the Trustees thanks for the 50 they had lately ordered me, as a Missionary. I dined with them; and they desired me to draw up a scheme for an Orphan-house. The evening I passed at Fresh Wharf: good old Mr. Delamotte was there, and pleased me much by his seeming so heartily to relish our reading Bishop Hall.

Fri., November 4th. I heard an excellent sermon at St. Antholine's, on holiness, or likeness to God; and passed the evening with B. D.; who then told me the reason why I was not sent for to Blendon, was, Mrs. Delamotte's fear of my making Hetty run mad: and when I gave them notice of my coming, she sent her up to town, that I might not see her; which Providence made the means of my having so many hours with her alone.

Sat., November 5th. I met and turned back with Betty, to hear Mr. Whitefield preach, not with the persuasive words of man's wisdom, but with the demonstration of the Spirit and with power. The churches will not contain the multitudes that throng to hear him.

Mon., November 7th. I read over *Pietas Hallensis*; and desired our

Orphan-house might be begun in the power of faith.

Thur., November 10th. In obedience to a summons from Miss Betsy this morning, I took coach for Greenwich, and walked the rest of the way to Blendon. We had some animating discourse before Mrs.

119

Delamotte came in. Then we fell into talk of the new birth, which she did not at all relish; but continued still cold, averse, and prejudiced against the truth.

Sun., November 18th. I preached at Bexley, on the love of God. Mrs.

Delamotte thanked me for my sermon with tears; owned she had loved Charles too well; and was quite altered in her behaviour towards me. We had farther conversation on the love of God. Mr.

Delamotte confessed there could be no happiness in anything else.

Mon., November 14th. Little Molly burst into tears upon my telling her God loved her. The whole family now appear not far from the kingdom of God.

Sun., November 20th. At St. Helen's I preached the circumcision of heart. The next day my flux returned.

Tues., November 22nd. Mr. Oglethorpe advised me to go to Tiverton. I went to take my leave of our friends at Blendon. Mrs. Delamotte was quite open, and not afraid that her son should be called a Methodist.

Fri., November 25th. At M. Hutton's this evening, my brothers Lambert and Wright visited me. The latter has corrupted the former, after all the pains I have taken with him, and brought him back to drinking. I was full, yet could not speak; prayed for meekness, and then set before him the things he had done, in the devil's name, toward re-converting a soul to him. He left us abruptly. I encouraged poor J. Lambert to turn again unto God.

Mon., November 28th. I took coach for Tiverton. The next day I called on my mother in Salisbury. She vehemently protested against our returning to Georgia.

Wed., November 30th. I had much serious conversation with a gentlewoman in the coach, concerning the new birth. I read part of Mr. Law. She was deeply struck, melted, conquered.

Thur., December 1st. We lodged at Dorchester; when my distemper fully returned.

Fri., December 2nd. I met horses at Honiton, and by four came to

120

Tiverton; where I found my brother much better.

Sun., December 4th. I was much melted at the sacrament. In the evening I reproved my sister (which I am often forced to do) for evil-

speaking.

Thur., December 22nd. Quite wearied out by her incessant slanders, to-day I had a downright quarrel with her about it. My brother on these occasions is either silent, or on my side.

Tues., December 27th. I was not sorry to set out for London. I rode as far as Taunton.

Wed., December 28th. In the coach I employed myself mostly in reading Cyrus's Travels, and Leslie's Short Method with the Deists.

Thur., December 29th. We narrowly escaped overturning, through the loss of a wheel. I supped in Salisbury, at my brother Hall's.

Sat., December 31st. I set out at two in the morning, and with the night came to James Hutton's.

121

January 5 - April 30, 1738

Thur., January 5th, 1738. I made frequent visits this month to Blendon, and rejoiced over Mrs. Delamotte, now entirely cordial and friendly.

We were joined by Mr. Piers, the Minister of Bexley, who delighted in every opportunity of conversing, singing, and praying with us.

Fri., February 3rd. In the afternoon news was brought me at James Hutton's, that my brother was come from America. I could not believe,

till at night I saw him. He comes, not driven away, but to tell the true state of the colony; which, according to his account, is truly deplorable.

Sat., February 4th. I informed Mr. Oglethorpe of his arrival. He was very inquisitive into the cause of his coming; said he ought not to have returned without the Trustees' leave. At ten, before the Council, I heard the fresh pleadings for Carolina.

Mon., February 6th. I waited on the good Archbishop, who received me with his usual kindness.

Wed., February 8th. I was with the Trustees, who were surprised by my brother's account of Georgia, the fewness of the people, &c.

Fri., February 10th. We dined at Mr. Vernon's, who accosted me, "Well, Sir, I hope you intend returning to Georgia." I answered, "That is my desire and design." I heard more of the great discouragements the poor people labour under.

Sat., February 11th. I heard Clerk plead for Georgia, before the Council, and Mr. Oglethorpe's speech.

Thur., February 16th. Mr. Oglethorpe told me, "Your brother must have a care. There is a very strong spirit raising against him. People say he is come over to do mischief to the colony. He will be called upon for his

reasons, why he left the people." I answered, "Sir, he has been twice before at the Board for that purpose, but was not asked that question,

and therefore had no opportunity to answer it. He will attend them

again on Wednesday morning." I waited on his Lordship of London,

and informed him of my brother's return. He spoke honourably of

him; expressed a great desire to see him; asked many questions about

122

Georgia, and the Trustees; forgot his usual reserve and dismissed me very kindly.

Fri., February 17th. I came in the Oxford coach to my old lodgings at

Mr. Sarney's.

Sat., February 18th. I rode over to Stanton-Harcourt, to see John

Gainbold and my sister. My brother met us. We prayed and sang

together. In the evening I prayed at Mr. Sarney's, with some scholars,

and a Moravian.

Sun., February 19th. I received the sacrament once more at

Christchurch.

Mon., February 20th. I began teaching Peter Bohler English.

Tues., February 21st. In the afternoon I lay down, half distracted with

the tooth-ache.

Wed., February 22nd. I waked much better. At five I had some close

conversation with Peter Bohler, who pressed upon our scholars the necessity of combining, and instanced in many awakened, but fallen asleep again, for want of it. He talked much of the necessity of prayer and faith.

Fri., February 24th. At six in the evening, an hour after I had taken my electuary, the tooth-ache returned more violently than ever. I smoked tobacco; which set me at vomiting, and took away my senses and pain together. At eleven I waked in extreme pain, which I thought would quickly separate soul and body. Soon after Peter Bohler came to my bedside. I asked him to pray for me. He seemed unwilling at first, but, beginning very faintly, he raised his voice by degrees, and prayed for my recovery with strange confidence. Then he took me by the hand, and calmly said, "You will not die now." I thought within myself, "I cannot hold out in this pain till morning. If it abates before, I believe I may recover." He asked me, "Do you hope to be saved?" "Yes." "For what reason do you hope it?" "Because I have used my best endeavours to serve God." He shook his head, and said no more. I thought him very uncharitable, saying in my heart, "What, are not my endeavours a sufficient ground of hope? Would he rob me of my endeavours? I have nothing else to trust to."

By the morning my pain was moderated. Ted Bentham, calling, then persuaded me to be blooded. I continued in great pain. In the evening he brought Dr. Manaton.

On Saturday morning I was blooded again; and at night a third time.

Sun., February 26th. Mr. Wells brought my sister Kezzy. Dr. Fruin came.

I dictated a letter to Dr. Cockburn, and James Hutton.

Mon., February 27th. The scale seemed to turn for life. I had prayed that my pains might not outlast this day; and was answered.

Tues., February 28th. My dear James Hutton came post from London, and brought me Dr. Cockburn's letter and directions. As soon as I was able, I sent my brother at Tiverton the following account: -

"Dear Brother, - I borrow another's hand, as I cannot use my own. You remember Dr. South's saying [I have been within the jaws of death, but he was not suffered to shut his mouth upon me]. I ought never to forget it. Dr. Manaton told me, he expected to have found me dead at his second visit. This several remarkable accidents concurred to hinder. I had kept in a week before the pleurisy came, and taken physic twice. At midnight it seized me so violently, that I never expected to see the morning. In the preceding afternoon I had taken Dr. Cockburn's electuary, and an hour after was visited by so outrageous a tooth-ache, that it forced me to the abominable remedy

of a pipe. This quickly made me discharge my astringent, and, in all probability, saved my life; binding medicines being poison in a pleuritic fever. I took my illness for the flux, and so never thought of sending for a physician. T. Bentham fetched him against my will, and was probably the instrument of saving my life a second time. Dr. M. called in Dr. Fruin. They bled me three times, and poured down draughts, oils, and apozems without end. For four days the balance was even. Then, as Spenser says,

'I over-wrestled my strong enemy.'

Ever since I have been slowly gathering strength; and yesterday took my first journey to my sister's room, who has been with me from the beginning, and no small comfort to me.

124

"One consequence of my sickness you will not be sorry for, - its stopping my sudden return to Georgia. For the Doctor tells me, to undertake a voyage now would be certain death. Some reasons for his not going immediately my brother will mention to you in person.

"Before I was taken ill, my brother set out for Tiverton; but came back instead of proceeding on his journey; stayed a week with me; and then went with Mr. Kinchin to Manchester.

"For some days that I continued mending, I was greatly tormented

with the tooth-ache. One day I prayed that the pain might be suspended; and it was for all that day.

"I had Dr. Fruin to my sister, taken ill. We communicated almost every day."

Tues., March 28th. I was greatly moved in reading the Life of Mr. Halyburton.

Mon., April 3rd. By my brother's advice, I resolved to give up my Secretary's place; and to-day wrote my letter of resignation.

Sat., April 8th. I got abroad to the evening prayers at Christ-church; and received comfort from the lessons and anthem.

Wed., April 12th. I received Mr. Oglethorpe's answer to my letter of resignation; wherein he offered, if I would keep my place, to get it supplied in my absence by a deputy.

Sat., April 15th. Drs. Fruin and Mancron called, and forbade my voyage. Both as physicians and friends they advised me not to go, but stay at College, since I might, as senior Master, expect offices and preferment.

Wed., April 19th. I came up to town, to take my leave of Mr. Oglethorpe, who received me with his accustomed kindness. The next day I had the satisfaction of once more meeting that man of God, Peter

Bohler.

Mon., April 24th. I took a ride to Blendon. In the afternoon we made Mr. Piers a visit; and, returning, found Mr. Broughton and my brother at Blendon.

125

Tues., April 25th. Soon after five, as we were met in our little chapel, Mrs. Delamotte came to us. We sang, and fell into a dispute whether

conversion was gradual or instantaneous. My brother was very positive for the latter, and very shocking; mentioned some late instances of gross sinners believing in a moment. I was much offended at his worse than unedifying discourse. Mrs. Delamotte left us abruptly. I stayed, and insisted, a man need not know when first he had faith. His obstinacy in favouring the contrary opinion drove me at last out of the room. Mr. Broughton was only not so much scandalized as myself. After dinner, he and my brother returned to town. I stayed behind, and read them the Life of Mr. Halyburton: one instance, but only one, of instantaneous conversion.

Wed., April 26th. I passed the day at Mr. Piers's, in singing, and reading, and mutual encouragement. In the evening we finished Halyburton. The meltingness it occasioned in me, (like those before,) soon passed away as a morning cloud. Next morning I returned to

London.

Fri., April 28th. No sooner was I got to James Hutton's, having removed my things thither from his father's, than the pain in my side returned, and with that my fever. Having disappointed God in his last visitation, he has now again brought me to the bed of sickness.

Towards told-night I received some relief by bleeding. In the morning Dr. Cockburn came to see me; and a better physician, Peter Bohler, whom God had detained in England for my good. He stood by my bedside, and prayed over me, that now at least I might see the divine intention, in this and my late illness. I immediately thought it might be that I should again consider Bohler's doctrine of faith; examine myself whether I was in the faith; and if I was not, never cease seeking and longing after it, till I attained it.

May 1 - August 31, 1738

Mon., May 1st. Mr. Piers called to see me. I exhorted him to labour after that faith which he thinks I have, and I know I have not. After receiving the sacrament, I felt a small anticipation of peace, and said, "Now I have demonstration against the Moravian doctrine that a man cannot have peace without assurance of his pardon. I now have peace,

yet cannot say of a surety that my sins are forgiven." The next and several times after that I received the sacrament, I had not so much as

bare attention, God no longer trusting me with comfort, which I should immediately turn against himself.

For some days following I felt a faint longing for faith; and could pray for nothing else. My desires were quickened by a letter of Mr. Edmunds, seeking Christ as in an agony.

Sat., May 6th. God still kept up the little spark of desire, which he himself had enkindled in me; and I seemed determined to speak of, and wish for, nothing but faith in Christ. Yet could not this preserve me from sin; which I this day ran into with my eyes open: so that after ten years' vain struggling, I own and feel it absolutely unconquerable. By bearing witness to the truth before Miss Delamotte, Mr. Baldwyn, and others, I found my desires of apprehending Christ increased.

Thur., May 11th. I was just going to remove to old Mr. Hutton's, when God sent Mr. Bray to me, a poor ignorant mechanic, who knows nothing but Christ; yet by knowing him, knows and discerns all things. Some time ago I had taken leave of Peter Bohler, confessed my unbelief and want of forgiveness, but declared my firm persuasion that I should receive the atonement before I died. His answer was, "Be it unto thee according to thy faith."

Mr. Bray is now to supply Bohler's place. We prayed together for faith.

I was quite overpowered and melted into tears, and hereby induced to think it was God's will that I should go to his house, and not to Mr. Hutton's. He was of the same judgment. Accordingly I was carried thither in a chair.

His sister I found in earnest pursuit of Christ; his wife well inclined to conversion. I had not been here long, when Mr. Broughton called. I

hoped to find him altered like myself; but, alas! his time is not yet

come. As to M. Turner, he gave her up; "but for you, M. Bray," said he, "I hope you are still in your senses, and not run mad after a faith which

must be felt." He went on contradicting and blaspheming. I thought it

my duty to withstand him, and to confess my want of faith. "God help

you, poor man," he replied: "if I could think you have not faith, I am sure it would drive me to despair." I put all my hopes of ever attaining

127

it, or eternal salvation, upon the truth of this assertion, "I have not now the faith of the Gospel."

As soon as he left us, Mr. Bray read me many comfortable scriptures,

which greatly strengthened my desire; so that I was persuaded I

should not leave his house, before I believed with my heart unto

righteousness.

Fri., May 12th. I waked in the same blessed temper, hungry and thirsty. after God. I began Isaiah, and seemed to see that to me were the promises made, and would be fulfilled, for that Christ loved me. I found myself more desirous, more assured I should believe. This day (and indeed my whole time) I spent in discoursing on faith, either with those that had it, or those that sought it; in reading the Scripture, and in prayer.

I was much moved at the sight of Mr. Ainsworth, a man of great learning, above seventy, who, like old Simeon, was waiting to see the Lord's salvation, that he might depart in peace. His tears, and vehemence, and childlike simplicity, showed him upon the entrance of the kingdom of heaven. In the afternoon I read Isaiah with Mr. Edmunds: saw him full of promises, and that they belonged to me. In the midst of our reading, Miss Claggetts came, and asked that they might hear us. We were all much encouraged to pursue the glorious prize held out to us by the evangelical Prophet.

When the company was gone, I joined with Mr. Bray in prayer and the Scripture, and was so greatly affected, that I almost thought Christ was coming that moment. I concluded the night with private vehement prayer.

Sat., May 13th. I waked without Christ; yet still desirous of finding him. Soon after W. Delamotte came, and read me the 68th Psalm, strangely full of comfortable promises. Toward noon I was enabled to pray with desire and hope, and to lay claim to the promises in general. The afternoon I spent with my friends, in mutual exhortation to wait patiently for the Lord in prayer and reading. At night my brother came, exceeding heavy. I forced him (as he had often forced me) to sing an hymn to Christ, and almost thought He would come while we

128

were singing: assured He would come quickly. At night I received much light and comfort from the Scriptures.

Sun., May 14th. The beginning of the day I was very heavy, weary, and unable to pray; but the desire soon returned, and I found much comfort both in prayer and in the word, my eyes being opened more and more to discern and lay hold on the promises. I longed to find Christ, that I might show him to all mankind; that I might praise, that I might love him.

Several persons called to-day, and were convinced of unbelief. Some of them afterwards went to Mr. Broughton, and were soon made as easy as Satan and their own hearts could wish.

Mon., May 15th. I finished Halyburton's Life with Miss Claggetts, &c. I

found comfort in the 102nd Psalm.

Tues., May 16th. I waked weary, faint, and heartless. My brother Hall coming to see me, I urged him to examine himself, whether he was in the faith. Two questions decided the matter: "Are you sure that is

right?" "Yes." "Are you as sure of the things unseen; of Christ being in you of a truth?" "Yes; infinitely surer." In the afternoon I seemed deeply sensible of my misery, in being without Christ.

Wed., May 17th. I experienced the power of Christ rescuing me in temptation. To-day I first saw Luther on the Galatians, which Mr. Holland had accidentally lit upon. We began, and found him nobly full of faith. My friend, in hearing him, was so affected, as to breathe out sighs and groans unutterable. I marvelled that we were so soon and so entirely removed from him that called us into the grace of Christ, unto another Gospel. Who would believe our Church had been founded on this important article of justification by faith alone? I am astonished I should ever think this a new doctrine; especially while our Articles and Homilies stand unrepealed, and the key of knowledge is not yet taken away.

From this time I endeavoured to ground as many of our friends as came in this fundamental truth, salvation by faith alone, not an idle, dead faith, but a faith which works by love, and is necessarily

productive of all good works and all holiness.

129

I spent some hours this evening in private with Martin Luther, who was greatly blessed to me, especially his conclusion of the 2nd

chapter. I laboured, waited, and prayed to feel "who loved me, and gave himself for the." When nature, near exhausted, forced me to bed, I opened the book upon, "For he will finish the work, and cut it short in righteousness, because a short work will the Lord make upon earth."

After this comfortable assurance that He would come, and would not tarry, I slept in peace.

Thur., May 18th. In the approach of a temptation, I looked up to Christ, and confessed my helplessness. The temptation was immediately beat down, and continually kept off by a power not my own. About midnight I was waked by the return of my pleurisy. I felt great pain and straitness at my heart; but found immediate relief by bleeding. I had some discourse with Mr. Bray; thought myself willing to die the next moment, if I might but believe this; but was sure I could not die, till I did believe. I earnestly desired it.

Fri., May 19th. At five this morning the pain and difficulty in breathing returned. The Surgeon was sent for; but I fell asleep before he could bleed me a second time. I was easier all day, after taking Dr.

Cockburn's medicines. I had not much desire. I received the sacrament; but not Christ. At seven Mrs. Turner came, and told me, I should not rise from that bed till I believed. I believed her saying, and asked, "Has God then bestowed faith upon you?" "Yes, he has." "Why, have you peace with God?" "Yes, perfect peace." "And do you love Christ above all things?" "I do, above all things incomparably." "Then you are willing to die?" "I am; and would be glad to die this moment; for I know all my sins are blotted out; the handwriting that was against me is taken out of the way, and nailed to his cross. He has saved me by his death; he has washed me with his blood; he has hid me in his wounds. I have peace in Him, and rejoice with joy unspeakable, and full of glory."

Her answers were so full to these and the most searching questions I could ask, that I had no doubt of her having received the atonement; and waited for it myself with a more assured hope. Feeling an anticipation of joy upon her account, and thanking Christ as I could, I looked for him all night with prayers and sighs and unceasing desires.

130

Sat., May 20th. I waked much disappointed, and continued all day in great dejection, which the sacrament did not in the least abate.

Nevertheless God would not suffer me to doubt the truth of his promises. Mr. Bray, too, seemed troubled at my not yet believing, and

complained of his uneasiness and want of patience. "But so it is with me," says he: when my faith begins to fail, God gives me some sign to support it." He then opened a Testament, and read the first words that presented, Matt. 9:1: "And he entered into a ship, and passed over, and came into his own city. And, behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed: and Jesus, seeing their faith, said unto the sick of the palsy, Son, be of good cheer; thy sins be forgiven thee. And, behold, certain of the scribes and Pharisees said within themselves, This man blasphemeth. And Jesus, knowing their thoughts, said, Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts? For whether is easier, to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee, or to say, Arise and walk? But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (then saith he to the sick of the palsy,) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine own house. And he arose, and departed to his house. And when the multitude saw it, they marvelled, and glorified God, which had given such power unto man."

It was a long while before he could read this through, for tears of joy: and I saw herein, and firmly believed, that his faith would be available for the healing of me. THE DAY OF PENTECOST.

Sun., May 21st, 1738. I waked in hope and expectation of His coming.

At nine my brother and some friends came, and sang an hymn to the Holy Ghost. My comfort and hope were hereby increased. In about half-an-hour they went: I betook myself to prayer; the substance as follows: -

"Oh Jesus, thou hast said, 'I will come unto you;' thou hast said, 'I will send the Comforter unto you; thou hast said, 'My Father and I will

come unto you, and make our abode with you.' Thou art God who canst not lie; I wholly rely upon thy most true promise: accomplish it in thy time and manner." Having said this, I was composing myself to sleep, in quietness and peace, when I heard one come in Mrs.

Musgrave, I thought, by the voice) and say, "In the name of Jesus of Nazareth, arise, and believe, and thou shalt be healed of all thy

131

infirmities." I wondered how it should enter into her head to speak in that manner. The words struck me to the heart. I sighed, and said

within myself, "O that Christ would but speak thus to me from Christ of my recovery, soul and body. She returned home repeating with all

joy and triumph, "I believe, I believe:" yet her heart failed her, and she durst not say the words to me that night.

On Sunday morning she took Mr. Bray aside, burst into tears, and informed him of the matter; objecting she was a poor weak sinful

creature, and should she go to a Minister? She could not do it; nor rest till she did. He asked whether she had ever found herself so before.

"No, never." "Why, then," said he, "go. Remember Jonah. You declare promises, not threatenings. Go in the name of the Lord. Fear not your own weakness. Speak the words: Christ will do the work. Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings hath he ordained strength."

They prayed together, and she then went up, but durst not come in till she had prayed again by herself. About six minutes after she had left him, he found and felt, while she was speaking the words, that Christ was with us. I never heard words uttered with like solemnity. The sound of her voice was entirely changed into that of Mrs. Musgrave. (If I can be sure of anything sensible.) I rose and looked into the Scripture. The words that first presented were, "And now, Lord, what is my hope truly my hope is even in thee." I then cast down my eye, and met, "He hath put a new song in my mouth, even a thanksgiving unto our God. Many shall see it, and fear, and shall put their trust in the Lord." Afterwards I opened upon Isaiah 40:1: "Comfort ye, comfort ye, my people, saith your God: speak ye comfortably to Jerusalem, and cry unto her, that her warfare is accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned; for she hath received of the Lord's hand double for all her sin."

I now found myself at peace with God, and rejoiced in hope of loving Christ. My temper for the rest of the day was, mistrust of my own great, but before unknown, weakness. I saw that by faith I stood; by the continual support of faith, which kept me from falling, though of myself I am ever sinking into sin. I went to bed still sensible of my own weakness, (I humbly hope to be more and more so,) yet confident of Christ's protection.

132

Mon., May 22nd. Under his protection I waked next morning, and rejoiced in reading the 107th Psalm, so nobly describing what God

had done for my soul. I fell asleep again, and waked out of a dream that I was fighting with two devils; had one under my feet; the other faced me some time, but faded, and sunk, and vanished away, upon my telling him I belonged to Christ.

To-day I saw him chiefly as my King, and found him in his power: but saw little of the love of Christ crucified, or of my sins past: though more, I humbly hope, of my own weakness and his strength. I had many evil thoughts darted into my mind, but I rejected them immediately yet not I). At noon I rose, continually fainting, nevertheless upheld. I was greatly strengthened by Isaiah 43, which God directed me to. "But now thus saith the Lord that created thee, O

Jacob, and he that formed thee, O Israel, Fear not: for I have redeemed thee, I have called thee by thy name; thou art mine. When thou passest through the waters, I will be with thee; and through the rivers, they shall not overflow thee: when thou walkest through the fire, thou shalt not be burned; neither shall the flame kindle upon thee. For I am the Lord thy God, the Holy One of Israel, thy Saviour."

My brother coming, we joined in intercession for him. In the midst of prayer, I almost believed the Holy Ghost was coming upon him. In the evening we sang and prayed again. I found myself very weak in body, but thought I ought to pray for my friends, being the only Priest among them. I kneeled down, and was immediately strengthened, both mind and body. The enemy did not lose such an opportunity of tempting me to pride: but, God be praised, my strength did I ascribe unto Him. I was often since assisted to pray readily and earnestly, without a form.

Not unto me, O Lord, not unto me, but to thy name be the glory!

An old friend called to see me, under great apprehensions that I was running mad. His fears were not a little increased by my telling him the prayer of faith had healed me when sick at Oxford. "He looked to see the rays of light about my head," he said, and more to that

purpose. I begged him, for his own sake, not to pass sentence till he had his full evidence concerning me. This he could not promise, but

133

faintly prayed me to flee from London, and, in despair of me, took his leave.

It was morning before I could get to sleep. Many motions of pride arose, and were continually beaten down by Christ my King. The devil also tempted me to impatience through pain; but God turned it into an occasion of resignation.

Tues., May 23rd. I waked under the protection of Christ, and gave myself up, soul and body, to him. At nine I began an hymn upon my conversion, but was persuaded to break off, for fear of pride. Mr. Bray coming, encouraged me to proceed in spite of Satan. I prayed Christ to stand by me, and finished the hymn. Upon my afterwards showing it to Mr. Bray, the devil threw in a fiery dart, suggesting, that it was wrong, and I had displeased God. My heart sunk within me; when, casting my eye upon a Prayer-book, I met with an answer for him.

"Why boastest thou thyself, thou tyrant, that thou canst do mischief?"

Upon this, I clearly discerned it was a device of the enemy to keep back glory from God. And it is most usual with him to preach humility, when speaking will endanger his kingdom, or do honour to Christ.

Least of all would he have us tell what things God has done for our souls, so tenderly does he guard us from pride. But God has showed me, he can defend me from it, while speaking for him. In his name therefore, and through his strength, I will perform my vows unto the Lord, of not hiding his righteousness within my heart, if it should ever please him to plant it there.

Throughout this day he has kept up in me a constant sense of my own weakness. At night I was tempted to think the reason of my believing before others was, my sincerity. I rejected the thought with horror, and remained more than conqueror, through Him that loved me.

Wed., May 24th. Being to receive the sacrament to-day, I was assaulted by the fear of my old accustomed deadness; but soon recovered my confidence in Christ, that he would give me so much sense of his love now, as he saw good for me. I received without any sensible devotion, much as I used to be, only that I was afterwards perfectly calm and satisfied, Without doubt, fear, or scruple. Among our communicants was Mrs. Pratt, who had been with me the night before, and related

134

her receiving Christ in a dream, when under great trouble. His words to her were, "Be of good cheer, thy prayer is heard." From that time to this, being six years, she has enjoyed perfect peace. Most of Saturday

night she had spent in intercession for me; as on Sunday morning I experienced.

I was much pleased to-day at the sight of Mr. Ainsworth, a little child, full of grief, and fears, and love. At our repeating the line of the hymn, "Now descend, and shake the earth," he fell down as in an agony. I found a general delight in their singing, but little attention: yet was not disquieted.

We passed the afternoon in prayer, singing, and conference. For one half hour I was with Miss Delamotte; now unconvinced, and full of dispute. I bore my testimony with plainness and confidence, declaring what God had done for my soul. Not hurt, but strengthened hereby.

From her I went to Miss Claggetts; young women of a better and more childlike spirit, who calmly and confidently looked for the promises. I was farther comforted by an excellent letter from my namesake in Georgia, persecuted for Christ's sake; on the highest step, I trust, of the legal state.

At eight I prayed by myself for love; with some feeling, and assurance of feeling more. Towards ten, my brother was brought in triumph by a troop of our friends, and declared, "I believe." We sang the hymn with great joy, and parted with prayer. At midnight I gave myself up to Christ; assured I was safe, sleeping or waking. Had continual

experience of his power to overrule all temptation; and confessed, with joy and surprise, that he was able to do exceeding abundantly for me, above what I can ask or think.

Thur., May 25th. I commended myself to Christ, my Prophet, Priest, and King. Miss D. came in a better mind. Before communicating, I left it to Christ, whether, or in what measure, he would please to manifest himself to me, in this breaking of bread. I had no particular attention to the prayers: but in the prayer of consecration I saw, by the eye of faith, or rather, had a glimpse of, Christ's broken, mangled body, as taking down from the cross. Still I could not observe the prayer, but only repeat with tears, "O love, love!" At the same time, I felt great 135 peace and joy; and assurance of feeling more, when it is best.

Soon after I was a little cast down, by feeling some temptation, and foreseeing more; but God lifted me up by his word. "Fear not: for I have redeemed thee, I have called thee by thy name; thou art mine.

When thou passest through the waters, I will be with thee; and through the rivers, they shall not overflow thee: when thou walkest through the fire, thou shalt not be burned; neither shall the flame kindle upon thee." (Isai. xliii.) This promise was fulfilled in me when under frequent motions of sin: I looked up to Christ, and found them

beaten down continually.

Fri., May 26th. We joined this morning in supplication for the poor malefactors, while passing to execution; and in the sacrament commended their souls to Christ. The great comfort we found therein made us confidently hope some of them were received as the penitent thief at the last hour. I was much refreshed soon after by Miss Delamotte, who, by the mercy of Christ, is brought back again, and more athirst after him than ever. I dined with great liberty of spirit, being amazed to find my old enemy, intemperance, so suddenly subdued, that I have almost forgot I was ever in bondage to him. In the evening I broke through my own great unwillingness, and at last preached faith in Christ to an accidental visitant.

Sat., May 27th. I felt a motion of anger, from a trifling disappointment; but it was no sooner felt than conquered. I received the sacrament: still no sensible love; but comfort. A gentlewoman, who has been long under the law, calling to see me, I thought, as she lived in the midst of opposers, no good could be done by speaking. Yet was I overruled to preach the Gospel. She seemed convinced and comforted. After she was gone, I was much assisted to intercede for her, and for poor Mr. Broughton, who continues the very life of all those that oppose the

faith. Two or three others calling were reprov'd of sin by the holy Spirit of God. Miss Claggetts seem'd on the very border of Canaan; being fully convinc'd of righteousness also, of Christ's imputed righteousness; and looking to receive it every moment as by promise theirs.

Trinity Sunday, May 28th. I rose in great heaviness, which neither

136

private nor joint prayer could remove. At last I betook myself to intercession for my relations, and was greatly help'd and enlarg'd herein; particularly in prayer for a most profligate sinner. I spent the morning with James Hutton, in prayer, and singing, and rejoicing. In the afternoon my brother came, and, after a short prayer for success upon our ministry, set out for Tiverton. I then began writing my first sermon in the name of Christ my Prophet.

To-day Mrs. Bray related to me the manner of her receiving faith in public prayers, and the great conflicts she has since had with the enemy. For some days he so darkened the work of God, that though her eye of faith had been open'd to see herself encompass'd with the blood of Christ, yet still he suggest'd to her that she did not believe, because she had not the joy which others had. She was just overpowered by his devices, when in great heaviness she open'd

upon, "Lord, I believe, help thou my unbelief." This stayed her for a time: but the tempter still pursued, and in the very words he had used

to shake my brother's faith. She went to public prayer, and was fervent throughout the whole. Toward the conclusion she saw as it were Satan under her feet; and came home in all the triumph of faith.

After dinner Miss Claggett and other friends came. I thought some would be now gathered into the fold, and was much assisted to pray. I rose, and saw the younger Miss Claggett under the work of God. I asked, urged, believed that she believed. She thought so too, but was afraid to confess it. While she stood trembling and in tears, I consulted the oracle for her, and met with Isai. 30:18: "And therefore will the Lord wait, that he may be gracious unto you; and therefore will he be exalted, that he may have mercy upon you: for the Lord is a God of judgement; blessed are all they that wait for him. For the people shall dwell in Sion at Jerusalem; thou shalt weep no more: he will be very gracious to thee, at the voice of thy cry; when he shall hear it, he will answer thee: She then opened the book on 2 Cor. 5:11: "Old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new." She read so far, and gave me the book to read on: "And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; to wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling

the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and

137

hath committed to us the word of reconciliation. Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God. For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him."

Mr. Holland then read, "Stand fast in the liberty where with Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage." She now openly professed her faith, and increased in confidence every moment. We joined in hearty thanks to God for his unspeakable gift.

Just before parting, she opened the book upon Luke 8:39: "Return to thine own house, and show how great things God hath done unto thee." This success was followed with inward trials; but at the same time I experienced the superior power of Christ.

Wed., May 31st. To-day God enabled me, in spite of the devil and my own heart, to send Mr. Wells a plain simple account of what God hath done for my soul.

THURSDAY, June 1st, 1738. I was troubled to-day, that I could not pray, being utterly dead at the sacrament.

Fri., June 2nd. I was still unable to pray; still dead in communicating; full of a cowardly desire of death.

Sat., June 3rd. My deadness continued, and the next day increased. I rose exceeding heavy and averse to prayer; so that I almost resolved not to go to church; which I had not been able to do, till within these two or three days past. When I did go, the prayers and sacrament were exceeding grievous to me; and I could not help asking myself, "Where is the difference between what I am now, and what I was before believing?" I immediately answered, "That the darkness was not like the former darkness, because I was satisfied there was no

guilt in it; because I was assured it would be dispersed; and because, though I could not find I loved God, or feel that he loved me, yet I did and would believe he loved me notwithstanding."

I returned home, and lay down with the same load upon me. This Mr. Ingham's coming could not alleviate. They sung, but I had no heart to

138

join; much less in public prayers. In the evening Mr. Brown, Holland, and others called. I was very averse to coming among them, but forced myself to it, and spent two or three hours in singing, reading, and prayer. This exercise a little revived me; and I found myself much assisted to pray.

We asked particularly, that, if it was the will of God, some one might now receive the atonement. While I was yet speaking the words, Mr. Brown found power to believe. He rose and told me, my prayer was heard, and answered in him. At the same time Mr. Burton opened the Bible upon Col. 1:26: "Even the mystery which has been hid from ages and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints: to whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory." We were all full of joy and thanksgiving. Before we parted, I prayed

with Mr. Brown, and praised God, to the great confirmation of my faith. The weight was quite taken off. I found power to pray with great earnestness, and rejoiced in my trials having continued so long, to show me that it is then the best time to labour for our neighbour, when we are most cast down, and most unable to help ourselves.

Mon., June 5th. I waked thankful, with power to pray and praise. I had peace at the sacrament, and some attention in public prayer. In the afternoon I met Mrs. Sims, with Mr. and Mrs. Burton, at Islington. He told me God had given him faith, while I was praying last night; but he thought it would do hurt to declare it then. Upon finding his heart burn within him, he desired God would show him some token of his faith, and immediately opened on, "Let there be light, and there was light." We rejoiced together in prayer and singing; and left the rest of the company much stirred up to wait for the same unspeakable gift.

Tues., June 6th. In the evening I read Luther, as usual, to a large company of our friends. Mr. Burton was greatly affected. My inward temptations are, in a manner, uninterrupted. I never knew the energy of sin, till now that I experience the superior strength of Christ.

Wed., June 7th. I found myself this morning under my Father's protection; and reading Matt. 7, "Ask, and ye shall receive," I asked some sense of his love in the sacrament. It was there given me to

believe assuredly that God loved me, even when I could have no sense of it. Some imperfect perception of his love I had, and was

strengthened to hope against hope, after communicating.

I went to Mrs. Sims, and passed the afternoon in singing and reading the promises. Miss Claggetts, Mr. Chapman, Verding, and others, dropped in, as by accident. We all went to public prayers; whence we again returned, contrary to my intention, to Mr. Sims. We joined in pleading the promises, and asking some token for good. I rose in confidence of our prayer being heard; and at the same time Mr.

Verding declared, with great simplicity and astonishment, that he had seen as it were a whole army rushing by him, and bearing the broken body of Christ. He found himself quite overpowered at the sight; was all in a cold sweat. While he spoke, my heart bore witness to the work of God in his; and I felt myself affected as on Whitsunday; was assured it was Christ; said the written word would bear witness with the personal, and opened it for a sign upon Isai. 45:24, 25: "Surely shall one say, In the Lord have I righteousness and strength: even to him shall men come, and all that are incensed against him shall be ashamed. In the Lord shall all the seed of Israel be justified, and shall

glory." I then read, "Look unto me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth; for I am God, and there is none else. I have sworn by myself, the word is gone out of my mouth in righteousness, and shall not return, that unto me every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear." And then, 1 Peter 1:3, "Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which, according to his abundant mercy, hath begotten us again unto a lively hope, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, to an inheritance incorruptible, undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you, who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation." After this he grew visibly in the faith, and we rejoiced and gave God thanks for the consolation. He appeared a very child; owned he feared nothing so much as offending his Father; was ready to die that moment. In the beginning of prayer he could hardly persuade himself to kneel down, not thinking he could find any benefit; so poor, so sinful a creature, what should he pray for? Returning home in triumph, I found Dr. Byrom; and, in defiance of the tempter, simply told him the great things Jesus had done for me and

140

many others. This drew on a full explanation of the doctrine of faith, which he received with wonderful readiness. Toward midnight I slept in peace.

Thur., June 8th. I had the satisfaction of hearing Mr. Sparks confess himself convinced now, that he is under the law, not under grace. In public prayer it pleased the Lord to melt me into humility and love. At three I took coach for Blendon, with Mr. Bray; and had much talk with a lady about the fall, and faith in Christ. She openly maintained the merit of good works. I would all who oppose the righteousness of faith were so ingenuous: then would they no longer seek it as it were by the works of the law.

Before seven we came to Eltham. In riding thence to Blendon, I was full of delight, and seemed in new heavens and a new earth. We prayed, and sang, and shouted all the way. We found Miss Betsy and Hetty at home, and prayed that this day salvation might come to this house. In the lesson were those words, "This is the accepted time, this is the day of salvation."

Fri., June 9th. I prayed with fervour for the family. The second lesson was blind Bartimeus. In riding to Bexley, with Mr. Piers, I spake of my experience in simplicity and confidence and found him very ready to receive the faith. We spent the day in the same manner, Mr. Bray relating the inward workings of God upon his soul, and I the great things he had lately done for me, and our friends at London. He

listened eagerly to all that was said, not making the least objection, but confessing it was what he had never experienced. We walked, and sang, and prayed in the garden. He was greatly moved, and testified his full conviction, and desire of finding Christ. "But I must first," said he, "prepare myself by long exercise of prayer and good works."

At night we joined in prayer for Hetty. Never did I pray with greater earnestness, expecting an immediate answer; and being much disappointed at not finding it, I consulted the Scripture, and met with Jehu's words to his men, "Let none escape out of your hands." Then, "I trust that I shall come shortly." Still I was in great heaviness for her, and could not sleep till morning. Waking full of desire for her

conversion, those words were brought to my remembrance, "The

141

Spirit and the bride say, Come; and let him that heareth say, Come; and let him that is athirst come: and whosoever will, let him take of the water of life freely. At this instant came a flash of lightning, then thunder, then violent rain. I accepted it as a sign that the skies would soon pour down righteousness.

Yesterday (the devil of secrecy being expelled) Miss Betsy plainly informed me, that, after her last receiving the sacrament, she heard a voice, "Go thy way, thy sins are forgiven thee," and she was filled thereby with joy unspeakable. She said within herself, "Now I do

indeed feed upon Christ in my heart by faith," and continued all day in the spirit of triumph and exultation. All her life, she thought, would be too little to thank God for that day. Yet even after this it was, that the enemy got so great advantage over her, in making her oppose the truth with such fierceness. For many days she did not know that she had in herself demonstration of that she denied. But after we had prayed that God would clear up his own work, the darkness of faith dispersed, and those fears that her conversion was not real, by little and little, were all done away.

Sat., June 10th. In the morning lesson was that glorious description of the power of faith: "Jesus answering said unto them, Have faith in God. For verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith. Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them." We pleaded this promise in behalf of our seeking friends, particularly Hetty and Mr. Piers. He came with his wife. The day before our coming he had been led to read the Homily on Justification, which convinced him that in

him dwelt no good thing. Now he likewise saw, that the thoughts of his heart were only evil continually, forasmuch as whatsoever is not of faith is sin.

He asked God to give him some comfort, and found it in Luke 5:23, &c.:

"Whether is it easier to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee, or to say, Rise up and walk? But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power upon earth to forgive sins, (he saith unto the sick of the palsy,) I say unto

142

thee, Arise, and take up thy bed, and go unto thine own house. And immediately he rose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his own house, glorifying God. And they were all amazed, and they glorified God, and were filled with fear, saying, We have seen strange things to-day."

This was the very miracle, I told him, from which God had shown his intention to heal me; and it was a sign of the like to be done by him.

Mr. Bray moved for retiring to prayer. We prayed after God, again and again, and asked him, whether he believed Christ could just now manifest himself to his soul. He answered, "Yes." We read him the promise made to the prayer of faith. Mr. Bray bade me speak some promise to him authoritatively, and he should find Christ make it good. I had not faith to do it. He made me pray again, and then read Psalm

65. I felt every word of it for my friend, particularly, "Thou that hearest the prayer, unto thee shall all flesh come. Blessed is the man whom thou choosest and receivest unto thee: he shall dwell in thy court, and shall be satisfied with the plenteousness of thy house, even of thy holy temple. Thou shalt show us wonderful things in thy righteousness, O God of our salvation, thou that art the hope of all the ends of the earth," &c.

Seeing the great confidence of Mr. Bray, and the deep humility of Mr. Piers, I began to think the promise would be fulfilled before we left the room. My fellow-worker with God seemed full of faith and the Holy Ghost, and told him, "If you can but touch the hem of his garment, you shall be made whole." We prayed for him a third time, the Spirit greatly helping our infirmities, and then asked if he believed. He answered, "Yes:" the Spirit witnessing with our spirits, that his heart was as our heart. Bray said, "I now know of a truth that Christ is in you." We were all filled with joy; returned thanks, and prayed for a blessing on his ministry; and then brought him down in triumph. Miss Betsy was greatly strengthened hereby, and bold to confess "she believed." All her speech now was, "I only hope that I shall never lose this comfort."

The day was spent in prayer and conference. Mrs. Piers was, with all

ease, convinced of unbelief. After supper I discoursed on faith from the lesson. The poor servants received the word gladly.

143

Sun., June 11th. While Mr. Piers was preaching upon death, I found great joy in feeling myself willing, or rather desirous, to die. After prayers we joined in intercession for Mr. and Mrs. Delamotte; then for poor Hetty: I received much comfort in reading Luther.

We took coach for church. In singing I observed Hetty join with a mixture of fear and joy. I earnestly prayed, and expected she should meet with something to confirm her in the service. Both the Psalms and lessons were full of consolation.

We adjourned to Mr. Piers, and joined in prayer for a poor woman in despair, one Mrs. Searl, whom Satan had bound these many years. I saw her pass by in the morning, and was touched with a sense of her misery. After pleading his promise of being with us to the end of the world, we went down to her in the name of Jesus. I asked her, whether she thought God was love; and not anger, as Satan would persuade her. Then I preached the Gospel, which she received with all imaginable eagerness. When we had for some time continued together in prayer, she rose up another creature, strongly and explicitly [declaring] her faith in the blood of Christ, and full persuasion that she was accepted

in the Beloved. Hetty then declared, that she could not but believe Christ died for her, even for her. We gave thanks for both, with much exultation and triumph.

After family prayer I expounded the lesson, and, going up to my chamber, asked the maid (Mary) how she found herself. She answered, "O, Sir, what you said was very comfortable, how that Christ was made sin for me, that I might be made the righteousness of God in him; that is, he was put in my place, and I in his." "Do you then believe this, that Christ died for you?" "Yes, I do believe it; and I found myself so as I never did before, when you spoke the word." "But do you find within yourself, that your sins are forgiven?" "Yes, I do." These and the like answers, which she made with great simplicity, convinced me, that faith had come to her by hearing. We joined in giving glory to God; for we perceived and confessed it was his doing. It pleased him likewise to bless me with a deep and hitherto unknown dread of ascribing anything to myself.

Mon., June 12th. This morning Mrs. Piers told me, she had always

144

doubted her having true faith; but now declared with tears, she was convinced her sins were forgiven, and she did believe indeed. We all went to Mrs. Searl, in strong temptation, nothing doubting but we should see the power of Christ triumphing over that of Satan. The

enemy had got no advantage over her, though he had laboured all night to trouble and confound her. As often as she named the name of Jesus, he was repelled, and her soul at peace. We were much edified by her deep humility, and preached the Gospel to her and her husband, who received it readily. After prayer she rose with, "How shall I be thankful enough to my Saviour". We parted in a triumphant hymn.

Tues., June 13th. Mr. Piers was sent for to a dying woman. She was in despair, "having done so much evil, and so little good." He declared to her the glad tidings of salvation, that as all her good, were it ten thousand times more, could never save her, so all her evil could never hurt her, - if she could repent and believe; if she could lay hold on Christ by a living faith, and look for salvation by grace only. This was comfort indeed. She gladly quitted her own merits for Christ's; the Holy Ghost wrought faith in her heart, which she expressed in a calm, cheerful, triumphant expectation of death. Her fears and agonies were at an end. Being justified by faith, she had peace with God; and only entered farther into her rest, by dying a few hours after. The spectators were melted into tears. She calmly passed into the heavenly Canaan, and has there brought up a good report of her faithful Pastor, who, under Christ, hath saved her soul from death.

These were the first-fruits of his ministry; and I find him strengthened

hereby, and more assured that the Gospel is the power of God unto salvation, to every one that believes. In the evening Mr. Delamotte returned.

Wed., June 14th. After morning prayer in the little chapel, I kept Hannah from going, that we might first pray for her: but we quickly found there was greater cause of thanksgiving. She told me she was reading a collect last night, which gave her vast pleasure: "Almighty God, whom truly to know is eternal life, grant us perfectly to know thy Son Jesus Christ, to be the way, the truth, and the life." "To be sure, Sir," said she, "I found myself so easy immediately, that I cannot tell you." A few questions fully satisfied us, that she was a true believer.

145

Poor Hetty was tempted to imagine she did not believe, because she had not been affected exactly in the same manner with others. We used a prayer for her, and parted.

On the road I overtook Frank, and asked what he thought of these things. He answered, "I was greatly delighted with one thing you said, how that Christ was made sin for us, that we might be made the righteousness of God in him." Upon farther examination I found him manifestly in the faith. We talked and rejoiced together, till we came to Eltham. He there left me, resolved to publish everywhere what things

Jesus had done for him.

The coach was filled with young ladies. I was forced to leave off reading, that I might interrupt their scandal. At London I was informed that my brother was gone with Mr. Ingham and Tilchig, to Hernhuth. The news surprised, but did not disquiet, me.

Thur., June 15th. I was sent for to baptize a child. It gave me occasion to speak upon faith. One of the company was full of self-righteousness. The rest were more patient of the truth, being only gross sinners.

Fri., June 16th. After dinner Jack Delamotte came for me. We took coach; and by the way he told me, that when we were last together at Blendon, in singing, "Who for me, for me hast died," he found the words sink into his soul; could have sung for ever, being full of delight and joy: since then has thought himself led as it were in everything; feared nothing so much as offending God; could pray with life; and, in a word, found that he did indeed believe in the Lord Jesus.

I was in the coach with Miss Delamotte. While it stopped I got out to reprove a man for swearing. He thanked me most heartily. We took up Hetty at Blendon, and went on to Bexley.

The next day (Sat., June 17th) we saw, and prayed with, Mrs. Searl, to our mutual encouragement. Mr. Searl heard us gladly. The afternoon

we passed with our friends at Blendon. Here I was stopped by the return of my pain, and forced to bed. Desires of death continually rose in me, which I laboured to check, not daring to form any wish concerning it.

Sun., June 18th. The pain abated; and the next day left me.

146

Wed., June 21st. I was concerned at having been here several days, and done nothing. I preached forgiveness to Mr. Piers's man, who seemed well disposed for receiving it, by a true simplicity. We prayed together, and went to public prayers. In the second lesson was the paralytic healed. I came home with the Miss Delamottes, Mrs. Searl, and the man, who declared before us all, that God had given him faith by hearing the sick of the palsy healed. We returned hearty thanks.

The Lord gave us more matter for thanksgiving at Blendon, where I read my brother's sermon on faith. When it was over, the gardener declared, faith had come to him by hearing it, and he had no doubt of his sins being forgiven. "Nay, was I to die just now," he added, "I know I should be accepted through Christ Jesus."

Thur., June 22nd. I comforted Hetty, under a strong temptation, because she was not in all points affected like other believers, especially the poor; who have generally a much larger degree of

confidence than the rich and learned. I had a proof of this to-day at Mr. Searl's, where, meeting a poor woman, and convincing her of unbelief, I used a prayer for her, that God who hath chosen the poor of this world to be rich in faith, would now impart to her his unspeakable gift. In the midst of the prayer she received it; avowed it openly, and increased visibly therein.

In the evening we had a meeting at Mr. Piers's, and read my brother's sermon. God set his seal to the truth of it, by sending his Spirit upon Mr. Searl, and a maid-servant, purifying their hearts by faith. This occasioned our triumphing in the name of Jesus our God.

Fri., June 23rd. I attended Mr. Piers to a poor old woman, whom he could never prevail upon to go to church. I expected we should be called to preach the law; but found her ready for the Gospel, and glad to exchange her merits for Christ's. The evening we passed among our little flock, and parted full of comfort, and peace, and joy.

Sat., June 24th. Riding to Blendon in the morning, I met William Delamotte, just come from Cambridge. He had left town well-disposed to the obedience of faith; but now I observed his countenance altered. He had been strongly prejudiced by the good folk at London. At Blendon I found Mr. Delamotte, not over-cordial, yet civil: met letters

from my mother, heavily complaining of my brother's forsaking her, and requiring me to accept of the first preferment that offered, on

pain of disobedience. This a little disquieted me. I was not much comforted by William Delamotte; but extremely moved for him, and could not refrain from tears. His sisters joined us. I began preaching faith, and free grace. His objection was, that it was unjust in God to make sinners equal with us, who had laboured perhaps many years.

We proposed singing an hymn. He saw the title, "Faith in Christ," and owned he could not bear it.

In our way to church, I again proclaimed to him the, glad tidings of salvation. He was exceeding heavy, and, by his own confession, miserable; yet could he not receive this saying, "We are justified freely by faith alone." The lesson comforted me concerning him. "Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me: and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, saith the Lord." To all such as think it hard to lose the merit of their good works, the Scripture spake as follows: "Your words have been stout against me, saith the Lord: yet ye say, What have we spoken so much against thee? Ye have said, It is vain to serve God: and what

profit is it that we have kept his ordinances, and that we have walked mournfully before the Lord of hosts."

Sun., June 25th. I stayed to preach faith to Mrs. Delamotte, whom Providence brought home yesterday, I trust, for that very purpose. I was so faint and full of pain, that I had not power to speak: but I had no sooner begun my sermon than all my weakness vanished. God gave me strength and boldness: and after an hour's speaking, I found myself perfectly well. I went and accosted Mrs. Delamotte in her pew: just as shy as I expected. Let it work: God look to the event!

After evening prayer, she just spake to me: Betsy wondered she could bring herself to it. My sermon (I heard) occasioned much disturbance to more than her. M. Sear at night was full of triumph.

Men., June 26th. I waited upon Mrs. Delamotte, expecting what happened. She fell abruptly upon my sermon, for the false doctrine therein. I answered, "I staked my all upon the truth of it." She went on, 148

"It is hard people must have their children seduced in their absence, If every one must have your faith, what will become of all the world.

Have you this assurance, Mr. Piers" "Yes, Madam, in some degree: I thank God for it." "I am sorry to hear it." One of the company cried, "I am glad to hear it, and bless God for him, and wish all mankind had it too."

She moved for reading a sermon of Archbishop Sharp's, Piers read. We excepted continually to his unscriptural doctrine. Much dispute ensued. She accused my brother with preaching an instantaneous faith. "As to that," I replied, "we cannot but speak the things which we have seen and heard. I received it in that manner; as have above thirty others in my presence." She started up, said she could not bear it, and ran out of the house. William protested against her behaviour. In the beginning, I had found the old man rise; but I grew calmer and calmer, he longer we talked. Glory be to God through Christ! I offered to go, but they would not let me. Betsy went and at last prevailed upon her to come in. Nothing more was said, At six I took my leave. Poor Hannah and Mary came to the door, and caught hold of my hand. Hannah cried, "Don't be discouraged, Sir: I hope we shall all continue steadfast." I could not refrain from tears. Hetty came in: I exhorted her to persevere. I took horse. William seemed much better disposed than his mother; promised to come and see me the next day. I joined with Mr. Piers in singing, "Shall I, for fear of feeble man, Thy Spirit's course in me restrain?" and in hearty prayer for Mrs. Delamotte.

Tues., June 27th. Calling upon poor Goody Dickenson, I asked, if she had now forgiveness. "Yes," said she, "I received it in the midst of your sermon." "Do you then believe Christ died for you in particulars?" "Yes, to be sure: I must believe it, if I would not deny the Scripture."

She expressed strong confidence in God; appeared full of love to two beggars that called; believed she should be saved, if she died just now; would come to church, if all in rags. In short, she left me no reason to doubt, but that she was taken in at the eleventh hour, being now near fourscore.

Coming back to Mr. Pier's, I found W. Delamotte. I was full of hope for him. he told me he had wrote two sheets against the truth; but in

149

seeking after more texts, had met one that quite spoiled it all. "Not but works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his

mercy he saved us." This convinced him; and immediately he burnt all

he had wrote. I asked what it was he still stuck at. "Nothing" said he,

"but God's giving faith instantaneously." I replied, that alone hindered his receiving it just now; no more preparation being absolutely

necessary thereto, than what God is pleased to give.

We were directed to many apposite scriptures, particularly Luke 7:47:

"Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven."

John 20:27, 28: "Then said he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and

behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my

side: and be not faithless, but believing. And Thomas answered and

said unto him, My Lord and my God."

We went to prayers, pleaded the promises for him with great earnestness and tears: then read 2 These. 1:11, 12: "Wherefore also we pray always for you, that our God would count you worthy of this calling, and fulfil all the good pleasure of his goodness, and the work of faith with power: that the name of our Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God and the Lord Jesus Christ." I observed the workings of God strong upon him, and prayed again. Then read the scriptures that first offered: - Titus 3:5: "Not by works of righteousness which we have done," &c. (The very text that stopped him in the morning.) Amos 4:12: "Because I will do this to thee, prepare to meet thy God." Psalm 38:6: "God setteth the solitary in families, he bringeth out those which are bound with chains:" and lastly, Psalm 66:20: "Blessed be God, which hath not turned away my prayer, nor his mercy from me."

While we were praying, and singing, and reading, alternately, a poor man, one Mr. Heather, came to talk with me. He had heard and liked the sermon upon faith. I asked him whether he had faith. "No."

Whether forgiveness of sins. "No." Whether there was or could be any good in him till he believed. "No." "But do you think Christ cannot give you faith and forgiveness in this hour?" "Yes, to be sure he can." "And do you believe his promise, that when two of his disciples shall agree upon earth, as touching anything they shall ask of him, he will give it

them?" "I do." "Why, then, here is our Minister, and I agree to ask faith 150 for you." "Then I believe I shall receive it before I go out of the room."

We went to prayer directly; pleaded the promise; and rising, asked him whether he believed. His answer was, "Yes, I do believe with all my heart. I believe Christ died for my sins. I know they are all forgiven. I desire only to love him. I would suffer anything for him: could lay down my life for him this moment." I turned to my scholar, and said, "Do you now believe that God can give faith instantaneously" He was too full to speak; but told me afterwards, he envied the unopposing ignorance and simplicity of the poor, and wished himself that illiterate carpenter.

Next day I returned to town, rejoicing that God had added to his living church seven more souls through my ministry. "Not unto me, O Lord, not unto me, but to thy name be the praise, for thy loving-mercy, and for thy truth's sake." I had hopes of seeing greater things than these, from a scripture He this day directed me to: Luke 5:9: "For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of fishes which they had taken."

I went to Mr. Sims's, in expectation of Christ. Several of our friends were providentially brought thither. We joined in singing and prayer.

The last time we prayed, I could not leave off, but was still forced to go on. I rose at last, and saw Mr. Chapman still kneeling. I opened the book, and read aloud, "And, behold, a woman, which was diseased with an issue of blood twelve years, came behind him, and touched the hem of his garment: for she said within herself, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole. And Jesus turned him about, and when he saw her, he said, Daughter, be of good comfort; thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that hour." My heart burned within me, while I was reading: at the same time I heard him cry out, with great struggling, "I do believe." We lifted him up; for he had not power to rise of himself, being quite helpless, exhausted, and in a profuse sweat. An old believer among us owned himself affected with a wonderful sympathy. We had the satisfaction of seeing Mr. Chapman increase in faith; and returned most hearty thanks to the God of his and our salvation.

Thur., June 29th. Miss Suky Claggett called, and to my no small comfort

151

informed me of her sister's lately receiving faith. She likewise brought me an invitation from her mother. Mrs. Turner would have sent for

her, (Miss B. Claggett,) but I would not suffer it; that I might have no hand at all in the matter. I sat down to write; when Miss Betsy came

for me. We joined in thanksgiving for her, and intercession for her mother; and then took coach. Mrs. Turner made the fourth.

I sought to the oracle for direction, and was much strengthened by the answer, from Acts 10:29: "Therefore came I unto you without gainsaying, as soon as I was sent for: I ask therefore for what intent ye have sent for me" What makes it more remarkable is, that it is St.

Peter's day. We all conceived great hopes of Mrs. Claggett. I found her very courteous, well-disposed, emptied of herself. We sang, and at her desire prayed together. She freely confessed how greatly she had been prejudiced against the truth; but was thoroughly satisfied by my reading the sermon. I prayed after it, without much affection; again with more; and the third time strongly moved. I knew that she believed. I believed for her. The Scripture gave the strongest testimony of it. At first she said, she must not presume to say she believed; but grew more and more confirmed. I left her, in confidence God would soon clear up his own work in her soul, beyond all doubt or contradiction. Soon after, to keep me from being lifted up, the messenger of Satan was suffered to buffet me.

Fri., June 30th. Thanks be to God, the first thing I felt to-day was a fear of pride, and desire of love. Betsy Delamotte called, and gave me the

following letter: -

"Dear Sir, - God hath heard your prayers. Yesterday, about twelve, He put his fiat to the desires of his distressed servant; and, glory be to Him, I have enjoyed the fruits of his Holy Spirit ever since. The only uneasiness I feel is, want of thankfulness and love for so unspeakable a gift. But I am confident of this also, that the same gracious Hand which hath communicated, will communicate even unto the end.

"I am your sincere friend in Christ, "W. DELEMOTTE.

"O my friend, I am free indeed! I agonized some time betwixt darkness and light; but God was greater than my heart, and burst the cloud, and broke down the partition-wall, and opened to me the door of faith."

152

In reading this, I felt true thankfulness, and was quite melted down with God's goodness to my friend.

I followed his guidance in the afternoon to Mr. Sim's. We spent the time as usual. Mrs. Chapman called; said she could not stay; yet stayed prayers. I was much assisted: rose, and asked her whether she believed. "I do not know but I do; for I never found myself so in my life; so strangely warmed! I seem to have a fire within me. I thought, while kneeling down, 'How could I expect to receive faith, when so many better than I were here?' It then came into my mind, that I had

left my money upon the stall; but God, thought I, could take care of it, or give me a better thing." We concluded the day with prayer at Mr. Bray's.

Sat., July 1st. I was again at Mrs. Claggett's. The eldest daughter and Mrs. Claggett joined us. I related the cure of the lame girl at Bath. She rejoiced to hear a person might have faith, and have it long obscured by worldly cares, yet not lost: said the maid's case was hers; professed her now believing, and owned the darkness she had long lain under, a just punishment for her not giving God the glory. We sang, and rejoiced together, and went to the house of God as friends. In the lesson He related his past kindness to her. "And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the Sabbath-day. And, behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up herself. And when Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity. And he laid his hands on her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God." Mrs. Claggett was deeply affected; and told me afterwards, that her not following the woman's example of glorifying God, had occasioned all the troubles of her life: but she was now resolved, as far as in her lay, to repair her past

unfaithfulness.

At Mr. Sims's I was extremely averse to prayer; would fain have stole away without it: but Mr. Bray stopped me, saying, my deadness could not hinder God, and forced me to pray. I had scarce begun, when I was quite melted down, and prayed more fervently than ever before. A poor man, who came in at the beginning of the prayer, now confessed his faith before us all, being full of joy and triumph. "He never found

153

himself so before; knew his sins were forgiven; could gladly die that moment."

Sun., July 2nd. Being to preach this morning for the first time, I received strength for the work of the ministry, in prayer and singing. The whole service at Basingshaw was wonderfully animating, especially the Gospel concerning the miraculous draught of fishes. I preached salvation by faith to a deeply attentive audience: I gave the cup.

Observing a woman full of reverence, I asked her if she had forgiveness of sins. She answered, with great sweetness and humility, "Yes, I know it now that I have forgiveness."

I preached again at London-Wall, without fear or weariness. As I was going into the church, a woman caught hold of my hand, and blessed

me most heartily, telling me she had received forgiveness of sins while I was preaching in the morning.

In the evening we met, a troop of us, at Mr. Slms's. There was one Mrs. Harper there, who had this day in like manner received the Spirit, by the hearing of faith; but feared to confess it. We sung the hymn to Christ. At the words, "Who for me, for me hath died," she burst out into tears and outcries, "I believe, I believe!" and sunk down. She continued, and increased in the assurance of faith; full of peace, and joy, and love.

We sang and prayed again. I observed one of the maids run out, and, following, found her full of tears, and joy, and love. I asked what ailed her. She answered, as soon as joy would let her, that "Christ died for her!" She appeared quite overpowered with his love.

Mon., July 3rd. I had some discourse with my friendly namesake, Charles Rivington. I begged him to suspend his judgement, till he heard me preach.

Tues., July 4th. I received a letter from my brother at Tiverton, full of heavy charges. At Mr. Sparks's I found Jephtha Harris. I convinced him so far, that he owned he had been prejudiced against the truth; and had not faith. I carried him to Mr. Bray's; prayed over him, and pleaded

the promises. All were much affected.

154

I corrected a sermon of Mr. Sparks's on justification. Took coach for Bexley. In the way I was enabled to pray for my brother. I heard a good account of Mrs. Delamotte, that she was almost beat out of her own righteousness.

Honest Frank made one of our congregation this evening, and gave a comfortable account of the little flock at Blendon. I received a fuller from Hetty; informing me that her mother was convinced of unbelief, and much ashamed of her behaviour towards me.

Wed., July 5th. William Delamotte came, and rejoiced with me for all God had done. We brought a woman home from church, and laboured hard to convince her she deserved hell. Another confessed her having received forgiveness of sins in sickness.

Fri., July 7th. Mrs. Delamotte followed me from church, sent for me down, hoped she did not interrupt me. Her third sentence was, "Well, Mr. Wesley, are you still angry with me?" "No, Madam," I answered, "nor ever was. Before I gave myself time to consider, I was myself so violent against the truth, that I know to make allowance for others."

Here we came to a full explanation; produced the scriptures which prove our justification by faith only, the witness of the Spirit, &c. By

these, and an excellent sermon of Bishop Beveridge's on the subject, she seemed thoroughly convinced. All she stuck at was, the instantaneousness of faith, or, in other words, the possibility of any one's perceiving when the life of faith first began.

She carried me in her coach to Blendon, where the poor servants were overjoyed to see me once more. While we were praying for her, she sent for me up to her closet. I found her quite melted into an humble, contrite, longing frame of spirit. She showed me several prayers attesting the true faith, especially that of Bishop Taylor: "I know, O Blessed Jesus, that thou didst take upon thee my nature, that thou mightest suffer for my sins; that thou didst suffer to deliver me from them, and from thy Father's wrath. And I was delivered from his wrath, that I might serve thee, in holiness and righteousness all my days. Lord, I am as sure thou didst the great work of redemption for me, and for all mankind, as that I am alive. This is my hope, the strength of my spirit, my joy, and my confidence. And do thou never let

155

the spirit of unbelief enter into me, and take me from this rock. Here I will dwell; for I have a delight therein. Here I will live, and here I desire to die."

She asked me what she could do more, being convinced of her want of

faith, and not able to give it herself. I preached the freeness of the grace, and betook myself to prayer for her, labouring, sighing, looking for the witness of the Spirit, the fulness of the promises, in her behalf. I conjured her to expect continually the accomplishment of the promise, and not think her confessed unworthiness any bar. Next morning I returned to town.

Sun., July 9th. I preached my brother's sermon upon faith at, and a second time in St. Sepulchre's vestry. In walking home with Mrs. Barton, I said, "Surely there must be something which you are not willing to give up, or God would have given you comfort before now." She answered only by her tears. After praying for her at Mr. Bray's, I lay down; rose; stopped her going home, and carried her with James and Mrs. Turner from the company to pray. After prayer, in which I was much assisted, I found her under a great concern, trembling, and cold; longing, yet dreading, to say "she believed." We prayed again. She then said, with much struggling, "Lord, I believe; help thou my unbelief." She repeated it several times, and gained strength by each repetition.

Mon., July 10th. At Mr. Sparks's request, I went with him, Mr. Bray, and Mr. Burnham, to Newgate; and preached to the ten malefactors, under sentence of death; but with a heavy heart. My old prejudices against

the possibility of a death-bed repentance still hung upon me; and I could hardly hope there was mercy for those whose time was so short. But in the midst of my languid discourse, a sudden spirit of faith came upon me, and I promised them all pardon, in the name of Jesus Christ, if they would then, as at the last hour, repent, and believe the Gospel. Nay, I did believe they would accept of the proffered mercy, and could not help telling them, "I had no doubt hut God would give me every soul of them."

In going to Mr. Chapman's I met Margaret Beutiman, and bade her follow, for we were several of us to join in prayer there. James Hutton,

156

Mr. Holland, Mr. and Mrs. Sims got thither soon after us. We sang, and pleaded the promises. In the midst of prayer, Margaret received the atonement, and professed her faith without wavering; her love to Christ, and willingness to die that moment. We returned thanks for her, and I then offered to go. They pressed me to stay a little longer: I did so, and heard Mrs. Storer, a Sister of Mr. Bray's, complain of the hardness of her heart. She owned she had been under the utmost uneasiness, since our last meeting at her brother's, unable to pray, or find any rest to her soul. While we were singing the hymn to the Father, she did find the rest she sighed after; was quite pierced, as she

said, her heart ready to burst, and her whole nature overpowered. We went to prayers, and then opened the scripture, "I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes." She then was strengthened to profess her faith, and increased in peace and joy. As we walked, she said she could not have conceived how these things could be; what the change was which we spoke of. Her faith was farther confirmed by public prayer; and she continued all the evening full of comfort, and peace that passeth all understanding.

Tues., July 11th. I preached with earnestness to the prisoners from the second lesson. One or two of them were deeply affected. At Bray's I found a letter from W. Delamotte, and read, with joy and thankfulness, as follows: -

"I cannot keep pace: the mercies of God come in so abundantly on our unworthy family, that I am not able to declare them. Yet, as they are his blessings through your ministry, I must inform you of them, as they will strengthen your hands, and prove helpers of your joy.

"Great, then, I believe, was the struggle between nature and grace in the soul of my mother; but God, who knoweth the very heart and reins, hath searched her out. Her spirit, like Naaman's flesh, is

returned as that of a little child. She is converted, and Christ hath spoken peace to her soul. This work was begun in her the morning you left us, though she concealed it from you.

"When she waked, the following scripture was strongly suggested to her: 'Either what woman, having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one,

157

doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find it.' She rose immediately, took up Bishop Taylor, and opened

upon a place which so strongly asserted this living faith, that she was

fully convinced. But the enemy preached humility to her; that she

could not deserve so great a gift. However, God still pursued, and she

could not long forbear communicating the emotion of her soul to me.

We prayed, read, and conversed for an hour; the Lord made use of a mean instrument to convince her of her ignorance in the word.

Throughout that day her mind was more and more enlightened, till at

length she broke out, 'Where have I been? I know nothing; I see

nothing. My mind is all darkness. How have I opposed the Scripture!'

The tempter, thus enraged, excited all his powers to persuade her she

was labouring after something that was not to be attained; but Christ

suffered her not to fall. She flew to him in prayer and singing; and

though Satan damped her much, yet could he not conquer her,

because that which was conceived in her was of the Holy Ghost.

"She continued agonizing all the evening. But how can I utter the sequel The first object of her thoughts the next morning was Christ. She saw him approaching; and seeing, loved, believed, adored. Her prayers drew him still nearer; and everything she saw concurred to hasten the embrace of her Beloved. Thus she continued in the Spirit till four; when, reading in her closet, she received the kiss of reconciliation. Her own soul could not contain the joys attending it. She could not forbear imparting to her friends and neighbours that she had found the piece which she had lost. Satan in vain attempted to shake her; for she felt in herself, Faith's assurance, hope's increase, All the confidence of love."

Mr. Sparks this morning asked me whether I would preach for him at St. Helen's. I agreed to supply Mr. Broughtoffs place, who is now at Oxford, arming our friends against the faith. The pain in my side was very violent; but I looked up to Christ, and owned his healing power. At the same time, that came into my mind, "Out of weakness were made strong." No sooner did I enter the coach than the pain left me, and I preached faith in Christ to a vast congregation, with great boldness, adding much extempore.

After sermon, Mrs. Hind, with whom Mr. Broughton lodges, sent for

158

me; owned her agreement to the doctrine, and pressed me to come and talk with Mr. Broughton, who, she could not but believe, must

himself agree to it.

From her I went to Mr. Sims, and found that God had set his seal to my ministry; Mr. Dandy and Miss Branford declaring, faith had come to them by hearing me. We rejoiced, and gave thanks from the ground of the heart.

Wed., July 12th. I preached at Newgate to the condemned felons, and visited one of them in his cell, sick of a fever; a poor black that had robbed his master. I told him of one who came down from heaven to save lost sinners, and him in particular; described the sufferings of the Son of God, his sorrows, agony, and death. He listened with all the signs of eager astonishment; the tears trickled down his cheeks while he cried, "What! was it for me? Did God suffer all this for so poor a creature as me?" I left him waiting for the salvation of God.

In the evening Mr. Washington of Queen's came to dispute with me. I simply testified my want of faith three months ago, and my having it now; asked whether he could lay down his life for the truth of his being in the faith; whether he allowed Christ to be as really present in

the believing soul, as in the third heavens; told him he was yet in his sins, and knew nothing, and begged him to pray for direction.

Thur., July 13th. I read prayers and preached at Newgate, and administered the sacrament to our friends, with five of the felons. I was much affected and assisted in prayer for them; and exhorted them with great comfort and confidence.

Fri., July 14th. I received the sacrament from the Ordinary; spake strongly to the poor malefactors; and to the sick Negro in the condemned hole, moved by his sorrow and earnest desire of Christ Jesus.

Sat., July 15th. I preached there again with an enlarged heart; and rejoiced with my poor happy Black; who now believes the Son of God loved him, and gave himself for him.

Sun. July 16th. Metcalf and Savage came: the latter received faith on Friday night, in prayer, and is now filled with comfort, peace, and joy. I

159

took coach with Metcalf; preached the threefold state with boldness; gave the sacrament. I went thence to Mrs. Claggett's; sang, rejoiced, and gave thanks, in behalf of both the maids, now added to the church by true divine faith. Mr. Claggett coming in by mistake, we laid hold on and carried him with us to Black-Friars. Very weak and faint, yet was I

strengthened to preach for above an hour. I was carried to bed full of pain, expecting my fever; yet believing it could not return, unless it were best.

Mon., July 17th. I rose free from pain. At Newgate I preached on death (which they must suffer the day after to-morrow). Mr. Sparks assisted in giving the sacrament.

Another Clergyman was there. Newington asked me to go in the coach with him. At one I was with the Black in his cell; James Hutton assisting. Two more of the malefactors came. I had great help and power in prayer. One rose, and said, he felt his heart all on fire, so as he never found himself before; he was all in a sweat; believed Christ died for him. I found myself overwhelmed with the love of Christ to sinner. The Black was quite happy. The other criminal was in an excellent temper; believing, or on the point of it. I talked with another, concerning faith in Christ: he was greatly moved. The Lord, I trust, will help his unbelief also.

I joined at Bray's with Hutton, Holland, Burton, in fervent prayer and thanksgiving. At six I carried Bray and Fish to Newgate again, and talked chiefly with Hudson and Newington. He declared he had felt, some time ago in prayer, inexpressible joy and love; but was much

troubled at its being so soon withdrawn. The Lord gave power to pray.

They were deeply affected. We have great hopes of both.

Tues., July 18th. The Ordinary read prayers and preached. I administered the sacrament to the Black, and eight more; having first instructed them in the nature of it. I spake comfortably to them afterwards.

In the cells, one told me, that whenever he offered to pray, or had a serious thought, something came and hindered him; was with him almost continually; and once appeared. After we had prayed for him in faith, he rose amazingly comforted, full of joy and love; so that we

160

could not doubt his having received the atonement.

At night I was locked in with Bray in one of the cells. We wrestled in mighty prayer. All the criminals were present; and all delightfully cheerful. The soldier, in particular, found his comfort and joy increase every moment. Another, from the time he communicated, has been in perfect peace. Joy was visible in all their faces. We sang,

"Behold the Saviour of mankind,

Nail'd to the shameful tree!

How vast the love that him inclined

To bleed and die for thee," &c.

It was one of the most triumphant hours I have ever known. Yet on Wed., July 19th, I rose very heavy, and backward to visit them for the last time. At six I prayed and sang with them all together. The Ordinary would read prayers, and preached most miserably. Mr. Sparks and Mr. Broughton were present. I felt my heart full of tender love to the latter. He administered. All the ten received. Then he prayed; and I after him. At half-hour past nine their irons were knocked off, and their hands tied. I went in a coach with Sparks, Washington, and a friend of Newington's (N. himself not being permitted). By half-hour past ten we came to Tyburn, waited till eleven: then were brought the children appointed to die. I got upon the cart with Sparks and Broughton: the Ordinary endeavoured to follow, when the poor prisoners begged he might not come; and the mob kept him down.

I prayed first, then Sparks and Broughton. We had prayed before that our Lord would show there was a power superior to the fear of death. Newington had quite forgot his pain. They were all cheerful; full of comfort, peace, and triumph; assuredly persuaded Christ had died for them, and wanted to receive them into paradise. Greenaway was impatient to be with Christ..

The Black had spied me coming out of the coach, and saluted me with his looks. As often as his eyes met mine, he smiled with the most composed, delightful countenance I ever saw. Read caught hold of my hand in a transport of joy. Newington seemed perfectly pleased.

Hudson declared he was never better, or more at ease, in mind and

161

body. None showed any natural terror of death: no fear, or crying, or tears. All expressed their desire of our following them to paradise. I

never saw such calm triumph, such incredible indifference to dying.

We song several hymns; particularly, "Behold the Saviour of mankind, Nail'd to the shameful tree;" and the hymn entitled, "Faith in Christ," which concludes, "A guilty, weak, and helpless worm, Into thy hands I fall: Be thou my life, my righteousness, My Jesus, and my all."

We prayed Him, in earnest faith, to receive their spirits. I could do nothing but rejoice: kissed Newington and Hudson; took leave of each in particular. Mr. Broughton bade them not be surprised when the cart should draw away. They cheerfully replied, they should not; expressed some concern how we should get back to our coach. We left them going to meet their Lord, ready for the Bridegroom. When the cart drew off, not one stirred, or struggled for life, but meekly gave up their spirits. Exactly at twelve they were turned off. I spoke a few suitable

words to the crowd; and returned, full of peace and confidence in our friends' happiness. That hour under the gallows was the most blessed hour of my life.

At Mr. Bray's we renewed our triumph. I found my brother and sister Lambert there, and preached to them the Gospel of forgiveness, which they received without opposition.

Thur., July 20th. At morning prayers in Islington. I had some serious conversation with Mr. Stonehouse, the Vicar. I brought him home with me from evening prayers.

Fri., July 21st. Mr. Robson came; and received the strange doctrine of faith with surprising readiness. At night many joined us in prayer and praise. Brother Edmonds bore his testimony: so did two others, who had received the blessing of pardon, in hearing my sermon upon, "The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord." Another stood up, (lately a notorious sinner,) and declared the same. We continued till eleven, praying, and praising God.

Sat., July 22nd. Mr. Robson confessed he did believe there was such a faith, but it was impossible for him to obtain it; and it must necessarily bring on a persecution. We continued pleading the promises for him: he was greatly moved, and grew stronger and stronger in hope. I was

full of expectation, as well as Mr. Bray. In singing the hymn to the Father, our poor friend was quite overpowered, and even compelled to

believe: till at last he was filled with strength and confidence.

At five Mr. Chapman came from Mr. Broughton, and appeared entirely estranged. He insisted that there is no need of our being persecuted now. I told him, I was of a different judgment; and believed every doctrine of God must have these two marks:

1. Meeting all the opposition of men and devils.
2. Triumphant over all. I expressed my readiness to part with him, and all my friends and relations, for the truth's sake; avowed my liberty and happiness since Whitsunday; made a bridge for a flying enemy, and we parted tolerable friends.

Mon., July 24th. I preached faith at Mr. Stonehouse's. Still he stuck upon fitness. We prayed most earnestly. Miss Claggetts dined with us. I prayed again, with great comfort and hope for him. He continued insensible. We bade him open the Bible. He did, on these apposite words: 1 Thess. 1:5: "For our Gospel came not unto you in word only, but also in power, and in the Holy Ghost, and in much assurance." I stayed with him after evening prayer, to keep him from Mr. Chapman. I agreed to take charge of his parish, under him, as his Curate. At night

Mrs. Turner told me at Mrs. Claggett's, that she had been greatly strengthened to pray in faith for Mr. Stonehouse.

Tues., July 25th. William Delamotte came, and carried me to Bexley.

Wed., July 26th. At Blendon. Mrs. Delamotte called upon me to rejoice with her, in the experience of the divine goodness. In the evening I met several sincere seekers, at Mr. Piers's; with some who knew in whom they have believed. We had great power in prayer, and joy in thanksgiving. W. Delamotte often shouted for joy. Before nine we got back to Blendon. Mrs. Delamotte then confessed that all her desire had been to affront, or make me angry; that she had long watched every word I said; had persecuted the truth, and all who professed it, &c.

Thur., July 27th. In the coach to London I preached faith in Christ. A lady was extremely offended; avowed her own merits in plain terms; asked if I was not a Methodist; threatened to beat me. I declared, I

163

deserved nothing but hell; so did she; and must confess it, before she could have a title to heaven. This was most intolerable to her. The others were less offended; began to listen; asked where I preached: a maid-servant devoured every word.

Fri., July 28th. Mr. Exell received faith, in immediate answer to our prayers. At Mr. Stonehouse's I met Charles Rivington, and his wife: but

could come to no agreement; I insisting on a particular manifestation of Christ to every soul, and he denying it.

Sun., July 30th. At six I received the sacrament; preached faith at ten; and again in the afternoon at All-hallows, Thames-street. My strength increased with my labour. At Mr. Sims's, I began expounding the Epistle to the Romans.

Mon., July 31st. I began writing a sermon upon Gal. 3:22: "But the Scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe."

I met Mr. Lynn, who had often asked me to his house. I went; and found him again convinced of unbelief, and more uneasy than ever.

Tues., August 1st. I read prayers at Islington, (as I do most days,) and slept at Mr. Stonehouse's.

Thur., August 3rd. I met Lord Egmont, and declared my intention of returning to Georgia, if my health permitted; with which he was much pleased.

I corrected Mr. Whitefield's Journal for the press; my advice to suppress it being overruled.

Sun., August 6th. I preached at Islington, and gave the cup. In the afternoon I read prayers in a church in London, and preached again. I

was faint, and full of pain, when I began; but my work quite cured me.

Thur., August 10th. I walked to Mrs. Hind's. Mr. Broughton and Washington were there. They denied explicitly that we are saved by Christ's imputed righteousness; and affirmed that works do justify; have a share in making us righteous before God. I appealed to the Homilies, which they had never read, for justification by faith only.

164

When they were gone, I had much lively conversation with Mrs. Hind, and her son, well-disposed to receive faith, if they have it not already.

Sat., August 12th. We were warmed by reading George Whitefield's Journal. I walked with Metcalf, &c., in great joy, wishing for a place to sing in, when a blacksmith stopped us. We turned into his house, sang an hymn, and went on our way rejoicing.

Sun., August 13th. I preached at Islington; gave the sacrament to a sick woman, who was therein assured of her reconciliation to God, through Christ Jesus.

Tues., August 15th. I communicated again with the sick woman. Mrs. Claggett and her daughters made the greater part of the congregation. We were all comforted. I seldom fail seeing them and Islington once a day.

Wed., August 16th. I was dragged out by Mr. Bray, to Jeph. Hattie's

religious Society; when, after much disputing, I confuted, rather than convinced, them, by reading the Homily on Justification.

Thur., August 17th. I preached faith to a dying woman, and administered the sacrament. She was satisfied God had sent us: told me, I was the instrument of saving her soul. I asked, "Had you then no faith before we came?" She answered, "No: how should I? it is the gift of God; and he never gave it me till now." "Do you now think you shall be saved?" "Yes," she replied, smiling; "I have no doubt of it." "You need not then fear the devil's hurting you." "I know that; he is chained: I have nothing to do with him, or he with me." She promised to bring up a good report of us, to those she was going to.

I read prayers at Islington; met Mrs. Brockmar; one who in despair had been directed to Christ, and in a fortnight found peace to her soul, steadfastly believing her sin had been imputed to Christ, and his righteousness to her. She asked me to go and see the sick woman again. I preached faith to a large company I found there. The woman bore a noble testimony. I asked her before them all, "Have you received forgiveness?" Her answer was, "Yes, I am assured of it by Christ himself." To them she said, they must not think they believe, but feel it, and have a full confidence thereof. They all thanked me much.

Fri., August 18th. I prayed and rejoiced with her again, yet more ascertained of her salvation. Mrs. Brockmar, the Claggetts, &c., were of the company. We got upon the leads and sang; full of zeal, and life, and comfort. I read prayers; and, with Mr. Brockmar and others, returned to staging at Mr. Stonehouse's. He read us an Homily. At seven we all walked out; were driven by the hard rain to a shed, where we sang and preached to those about us. I came, wet through, to Mr. Bray's: joined our friends there, in singing, reading, and prayer. A young man received faith in that hour.

Sat., August 19th. At Mr. Stonehouse's I read prayers with some life. I gave the sacrament to the woman: asked, "Do you still believe you shall be saved?" "Yes; I am humbly confident of it, and care not how soon I depart. I desire to be dissolved, and to be with Christ." We sang on the leads, as before.

At three I found my friend Stonehouse exceeding heavy, and sorely distressed through fear of marrying. I prayed earnestly that neither he nor I might ever be left to follow our own heart's desires. After reading prayers, I buried a corpse: and went back to Bray's, weighed down with my poor George's burden.

Sun., August 20th. I preached at Islington in the morning, at Clerkenwell in the afternoon, on, "The Scripture bath concluded all

under sin," &c. God gave me great boldness; and the word, I trust, did not return empty.

Mon., August 21st. Mr. Stonehouse's maid, Thomasin, told me, she had found great peace, and comfort, and joy, in prayer last Saturday, so that her very inside (as she expressed it) was changed. I visited Mrs. Hall, a dying. She made signs of her confident faith. Then Mrs. Hankinson; who told me, she had been very uneasy ever since I said, a person must be sure of their forgiveness. I preached faith, as the only instrument of justification. She was quite melted down. We prayed: she rose, and said, her heart was set at liberty, her burden taken away, and her spirit joyful in Christ her Saviour.

Thur., August 24th. At Mrs. Musgrave's I met one Mrs. Nichols; who readily owned she was not free, had not faith; but believed Christ could just then give it her. We prayed for her in faith. She received the

166

immediate answer; expressed her confidence, delight, and love of Jesus; and, at the same time, her utter defiance of Satan, sin, and death.

Sat., August 26th. I was with Mr. Stonehouse: posse d with a strange fancy, that a man must be wholly sanctified, before he can know that he is justified.

Sun., August 27th. I preached at St. John's the threefold state, and helped to administer the sacrament to a very large congregation.

Mon., August 28th. I came in the coach to Oxford; rejoiced at Mr. Fox's, with Mr. Kinchin, Hutchins, and other Christian friends.

Tues., August 29th. I preached to the poor prisoners in the Castle.

Many, with Mr. Watson, were present at the Society. All of one mind; earnestly seeking Christ. I read the Homilies, and continued instant in prayer. A woman cried out, "Where have I been so long I have been in darkness? I never shall be delivered out of it," - and burst into tears.

Mrs. Cleminger, too, appeared in the pangs of the new birth.

Wed., August 30th. I left Mr. Watson, convinced of unbelief, and rode to Stanton-Harcourt. I spoke with great reluctance, yet fully and plainly, to my sister; and then to

Mr. Gainbold and Kinchin, who surprised me by receiving my hard saying, that they had not faith. I was ashamed to see the great thankfulness, and childlike, loving spirit of Mr. Kinchin, even before justification.

Thur., August 31st. I waited upon the Dean; but we could not quite agree in our notions of faith. He wondered we had not hit upon the Homilies sooner: treated me with great candour and friendliness.

At the Society I read my sermon, "The Scripture hath concluded all under sin," and urged upon each my usual question, "Do you deserve to be damned?" Mrs. Platt, with the utmost vehemence, cried out, "Yes; I do, I do!" I prayed, that if God saw there any contrite soul, he would fulfil his promise, of coming and making his abode with it.

"If thou hast sent thy Spirit to reprove any sinner of sin, in the name of 167 Jesus Christ, I claim salvation for that sinner!" Again she broke out into strong cries, but of joy, not sorrow, being quite overpowered with the love of Christ. I asked her, if she believed in Jesus. She answered in full assurance of faith. We sang and rejoiced over her, (she still continued kneeling,) joined in thanksgiving; but her voice was heard above ours.

Mr. Kinchin asked, "Have you forgiveness of sins?" "I am perfectly assured I have." "Have you the earnest of the Spirit in your heart?" "I have; I know I have: I feel it now within." Her answers to these and the like questions were expressive of the strongest confidence, to the great encouragement of all present.

I related this at Hutchins's, before Mr. Wells, who seems fully convinced of the truth.

September 1 - December 26, 1738

Fri., September 1st. I took coach for London. Between five and six reached Mrs. Claggett's. They heartily joined me in praise and prayer.

Mr. Claggett was very friendly.

James Hutton supped with us. I found several at Bray's. After prayer he told me, God plainly forbids my return to America, by my success here.

Sun., September 3rd. I preached salvation by faith at Westminster Abbey; gave the cup. In the afternoon I preached at St. Botolph's; and expounded Rom. 2, at Sims's, to above two hundred people.

Mon., September 4th. Charles Kinchin, now my inseparable companion, accompanied me to Bexley and Blendon. I prayed, and was comforted with the poor people.

Tues., September 5th. Mr. Piers agreed to board my sister Kezzy. I read my sermon; prayed and rejoiced with Mrs. Delamotte, and the rest at Blendon. Charles was all thankfulness and love. I returned to town very ill of a sore throat.

Sun., September 10th. I preached faith in the morning at Sir George Wheler's chapel, and assisted at the sacrament. In the afternoon at St.

168

Botolph's. In the evening at Sims's I was much strengthened to pray and expound to above three hundred attentive souls, Another lost sheep was now brought home.

Fri., September 15th. Meeting Charles Metcalf's mother, I laboured to

convince her of unbelief (our first point with all). She yielded at last; and we joined in earnest prayer for her.

Sat., September 16th. James Hutton came, and carried me perforce to Newgate; where we preached Christ to four condemned prisoners. At night my brother returned from Hernhuth. We took sweet counsel together, comparing our experiences.

Sun., September 17th. At the early sacrament, my brother read prayers; I preached "all under sin" in Grace-church-street; the morning: at Queen's-street chapel in the afternoon. In the evening I preached faith, from Rom. ill., at the Savoy Society. My brother entertained us at night with the Moravian experiences.

Fri., September 22nd. At Bray's I expounded Eph. 1. A dispute arising about absolute predestination, I entered my protest against that doctrine.

Sun., September 24th. I comforted Mrs. Claggett, much threatened by her husband; and then Mrs. Hankinson, who has lost several boarders, yet is in nothing terrified by her adversaries. I read prayers in Islington church, and preached with great boldness. There was a vast audience, and better disposed than usual. None went out, as they had threatened, and frequently done heretofore; especially the well-

dressed hearers, "whene'er I mentioned hell to ears polite," and urged that rude question, "Do you deserve to be damned?"

We sang, rejoiced, and gave thanks at Mr. Stonehouse's; and again at Mrs. Hankinson's. I talked with one of her misses, to whom faith had come by hearing.

Wed., September 27th. In our way to Oxford, I talked dosely with my fellow-traveller, Mr. Combes. He expressed his desire of faith: I was moved to sing, "Salvation by faith," then "Faith in Christ." I told him, if the Spirit had convinced him of unbelief, he could of righteousness also, even before we reached Oxford. I stopped and prayed that he

169

might believe. Immediately he told me, he was in such a blessed temper, as he never before experienced. We halted, and went to prayers. He testified the great delight he felt, saying, it was heaven, if it would but continue. While we were discoursing, the fire within him, he said, diffused itself through every part; he was brim full of joy, (yet not knowing he believed,) and eager to praise God. He called upon me to join. "Was I now in heaven, I could not think of my sins; I should only think of praising God." We sang and shouted all the way to Oxford.

I met our friends with Mr. Hutchins at Fox's. Mrs. Platt was full of life

and love. We read the experiences of the Moravians.

Thur., September 28th. I called on my friend that was, John Sarney, now entirely estranged by the offence of the cross. I rode to my constant friend, John Gambold. Mr. Combes communicated with us: his warmth, he told me, had returned through his professing his faith. I left Mrs. Gambold in confident hope of soon receiving it. I preached boldly at Oxford; prayed after God, with Mr. Wells.

Sat., September 30th. I returned to town, having in some measure confirmed our friends at Oxford. My brother informed me of one, who was yesterday an open sinner, and to-day received into Christ's church, or the company of faithful people. Mrs. Claggett said, that this morning, in utter despair, she had heard a distinct whisper, "I am the Lord thy God, mighty to save."

Sun., October 1st. I read prayers and gave the sacrament at the quest-room. In the afternoon I read prayers, and preached at St. Margaret's, Westminster.

Mon., October 2nd. I dined at Mr. Brockmar's; and we admonished one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs. I went, with the three Miss Claggetts, to our poor sick woman. My brother and James followed; then Mrs. Metcalf and three of the Delamottes. We found her

full of triumph, and vehement desires to be dissolved, and to be with Christ. We did this in remembrance of Him.

Thur., October 5th. I went with Sparks to Newgate; shamefully unwilling: yet preached on repentance with earnest zeal.

170

Sun., October 8th. I preached at Bexley "all under sin;" finished my sermon in the afternoon. The people very outrageous. Mrs. Delamotte

carried me home. I exhorted my friends in the kitchen. A sermon was read in the parlour. I preached faith in Christ. Mr. Delamotte made no objection, but seemed much pleased.

Mon., October 9th. I walked with Will. to Bexley, where my sermon has occasioned a great uproar.

Wed., October 11th. I got back to my friends in London. I spoke plainly to Mr. Claggett, who has been very violent toward his wife since I left them.

Thur., October 12th. I was at West's with Bray and Sparks, and prayed, pleading the promises in much bodily pain. I asked in faith that it might leave me: it did, while I was walking to James's.

Fri., October 13th. At seven I read prayers and preached at St. Antholin's.

Sun., October 15th. I heard Hutchins at St. Lawrence's: had much

comfort and meltings in prayer after the sacrament. I preached the one thing needful at Islington, and added much extempore; sang at Mr. Stonehouse's: Sims's was excessively crowded in the evening; spake with much boldness and warmth. At Bray's I found the bands meeting. Mr. Stonehouse was there, in a most childlike spirit. I was moved to pray for him earnestly, and according to God. I asked particularly that some one might then receive the atonement. While they were going, E - - came; complained of the pain and burden of sin, that bruised him. I took him aside with Hutchins. He received faith in immediate answer to our prayer; professed it; full of peace, and joy, and love. I expressed a strong desire to pray for Mr. Stonehouse. I prayed again with vehemence and tears. Bray was greatly affected; so were James and all the rest: yet no answer. Mr. Stonehouse said, the blessing was withheld from him to increase our importunity.

Fri., October 20th. Seeing so few present at St. Antholin's, I thought of preaching extempore: afraid; yet ventured on the promise, "Lo, I am with you always;" and spake on justification from Rom. 3, for three quarters of an hour, without hesitation. Glory be to God, who keepeth

his promise for ever.

Sat., October 21st. I waited with my brother on the Bishop of London, to answer the complaints he had heard against us, that we preached an absolute assurance of salvation. Some of his words were, "If by 'assurance' you mean an inward persuasion, whereby a man is conscious in himself, after examining his life by the law of God, and weighing his own sincerity, that he is in a state of salvation, and acceptable to God; I don't see how any good Christian can be without such an assurance." "This," we answered, "is what we contend for: but we have been charged as Antinomians, for preaching justification by faith only." "Can any one preach otherwise, who agrees to our Church and the Scriptures?" "Indeed, by preaching it strongly, and not inculcating good works, many have been made Antinomians in theory, though not in practice: especially in King Charles's time." "But there is a heavy charge against us Bishops, by your bringing the Archbishop's authority for re-baptizing an adult." My brother answered, "That he had expressly declared the contrary: yet," added he, "if a person dissatisfied with lay-baptism should desire episcopal, I should think it my duty to administer it, after having acquainted the Bishop according to the canon." "Well; I am against it myself, where any one has had the Dissenters' baptism."

Next my brother inquired, whether his reading in a Religious Society made it a conventicle. His Lordship warily referred us to the laws: but

upon our urging the question, "Are the Religious Societies conventicles?" he answered, "No; I think not: however, you can read the acts and laws as well as I: I determine nothing." We hoped his Lordship would not henceforward receive an accusation against a Presbyter, but at the mouth of two or three witnesses. He said, "No; by no means. And you may have free access to me at all times," We thanked him, and took our leave.

Sun., October 22nd. I preached one thing needful at St. Clement's, to a very large audience, (many of whom stayed the communion,) and again at Sir G. Wheler's chapel.

Tues., October 24th. I told Mr. Claggett, in one of his persecuting fits, that I should be glad to see him when on a sick-bed; that I had the

172

satisfaction of having him my friend, when he was most so to himself, and to God. He went out to fetch Bishop Taylor to confute me; but

opened upon a place, strongly asserting this living, justifying faith. He owned himself fully convinced; admired the hand of Providence;

confessed he had loathed the sight of me, and hated me from his

heart; but now loved me entirely, and all mankind; could hug me in his

bosom; never knew such comfort in his life, as at this moment; could

not be beat out of it by all the world. Alas! that this morning-cloud

should ever pass away!

Thur., October 26th. At M. Hind's I was charged by Mr. Capell, with particularly pleading the promises. I confessed, and justified it. James came to second me. We were both zealous, not angry.

Fri., October 27th. I was at Mr. Sparks's, who is fully persuaded his sins are forgiven.

Sun., October 29th. I preached with strength at St. George's; then at Ironmongers' Almshouses; and at night expounded Rom. 5 to a large audience in the Minorlea.

Thur., November 2nd. I was much affected in praying for Mr. Stonehouse.

Fri., November 3rd. I sang with him; envied his exquisite tenderness of conscience. I walked with Metcalf and Betty Claggett to visit a woman dying in the faith; thence to Miss Reeves, who is now assured of her acceptance with God.

Sat., November 4th. I preached at St. Antholin's, reconciling those who never differed, St. Paul and St. James.

Sun., November 6th. I preached the three-fold state at St. Alban's, Wood-street: then expounded at Sims's.

Tues., November 7th. At Newgate I was melted down under the word I

spake.

Wed., November 8th. At Bexley. Mr. Piers, through fear of the world's threatenings, had left off the meeting on Wednesday night. My sister would not give up her pretensions to faith; told me, half angry, "Well,

173

you will know in the next world, whether I have faith or no." I asked her, "Will you then discharge me, in the sight of God, from speaking to

you again? If you will, I promise never more to open my mouth till we meet in eternity." She burst into tears, fell on my neck, and melted me into fervent prayer for her.

Sat., November 11th. Charles Graves came, and rejoiced ray heart with the account of his having received the atonement.

Sun., November 12th. Mr. Piers refused me his pulpit, through fear of man; pretending tenderness to his flock. I plainly told him, if he so rejected my testimony, I would come to see him no more. I walked back to town in the strength of the Lord; and expounded at Sims's. All were dissolved in tears.

Mon., November 13th. Charles brought Mr. W. Seward; a zealous soul, knowing only the baptism of John.

Tues., November 14th. I had another conference with his Lordship of London. "I have used your Lordship's permission to wait upon you. A

woman desires me to baptize her; not being satisfied with her baptism by a Dissenter: she says sure and unsure is not the same." He immediately took fire, and interrupted me: "I wholly disapprove of it: it is irregular." "My Lord, I did not expect your approbation. I only came, in obedience, to give you notice of my intention." "It is irregular. I never receive any such information, but from the Minister." "My Lord, the Rubric does not so much as require the Minister to give you notice, but any discreet person. I have the Minister's leave." "Who gave you authority to baptize?" "Your Lordship: and I shall exercise it in any part of the known world." "Are you a licensed Curate?" "I have the leave of the proper Minister." "But don't you know, no man can exercise parochial duty in London, without my leave? It is only tacit consent." "But you know many do take that permission for authority; and you yourself allow it." "It is one thing to connive, and another to approve. I have power to inhibit you." "Does your Lordship exert that power? Do you now inhibit me?" "O, why will you push things to an extreme? I do not inhibit you." "Why then, my Lord, according to your own concession, you permit or authorize me." "I have a power to punish, and to forbear punishing." "That seems to imply, that I have 174 done something worthy of punishment. I should be glad to know, that I may answer. Does your Lordship charge me with any crime?" "No, no: I charge you with no crime." "Do you then dispense with my giving you notice of any baptisms for the future?" "I neither dispense, nor not dispense."

He railed at Lawrence on lay-baptism; blamed my brother's sermon,

as inclining to Antinomianism. I charged Archbishop Tillotson with denying the faith. He allowed it, and owned they ran into one extreme, to avoid another. He concluded the conference with, "Well, Sir, you knew my judgment before, and you know it now. Good morrow to you."

I read prayers at Islington, and baptized an adult; Mr. Stonehouse, M. Sims, and M. Breton, being the witnesses.

Wed., November 15th. I dined at old Mr. Hutton's. They could scarcely be civil. Surely for Christ's sake have we lost this friendly family.

Thur., November 16th. After morning prayers, I baptized Mrs. Bell with hypothetical baptism. I sang and prayed with assistance, at Mr. Stonehouse's. Then Mrs. Wren confessed, she had been in bondage ten years, but received the atonement on Tuesday night, while we were praying: was now perfectly free: full of peace, and joy in believing.

Another professed her faith lately received. I dined at my friend Stonehouse's, who very kindly offers to keep my brother and me. M. Hankinson carried me to a poor woman, broken, bruised, and bound by sin. After prayer she arose, loosed from her bond, and glorified God.

Sat., November 18th. I had a joyful meeting with my dear Charles

Delamotte, just returned from Georgia. I found, in conversation, that he had received forgiveness five months ago; and continued in peace and liberty.

Sun., November 19th. At Dr. Crow's desire, I preached in his church at Bishopsgate; and dined at Mr. Brockmar's, where Mr. Seward testified faith.

I visited a poor woman of eighty-four; who told me she was reserved

175

for some work of God: was soon beat out of her own works; and in the midst of prayer set at liberty. She rose, caught hold of me, declared her enlargement; that she was now at ease, ready to go into eternity this moment. She prayed for and blessed me with great earnestness.

Mon., November 20th. I had a most comfortable sacrament at Bray's; Mr. Sparks, the three Miss Claggetts, &c., partaking. I passed the evening at Blendon, in prayer and thanksgiving.

Tues., November 21st. I communicated again at Bray's. I triumphed with some who are persecuted for righteousness' sake.

Wed., November 22nd. I set out in the coach for Oxford.

Fri., November 24th. I met Charles Kinchin there. I received the blessed sacrament at Mrs. Townsend's, with much comfort.

Sat., November 25th. I felt a pining desire to die; foreseeing the infinite

dangers and troubles of life. At Mr. Wells's I preached the faith of the Gospel to him and Mr. Heare. Charles carried me to the Castle. I read prayers, and was afterwards constrained to speak freely and fully. I was much cheered by it myself. I rode with Mr. Wells and Kinchin to Coggs, where we spent the evening in prayer and the Scriptures.

Sun., November 26th. I preached the three-fold state at Coggs: then rode on to my brother Gambold's.

Tues., November 23th. I dined in Christ-Church Hall, as one not belonging to them.

Wed., November 29th. After morning prayers, I called on Mr. Whitefield, who pressed me to accept of a College living. I read prayers, and preached at the Castle.

Thur., November 30th. I paid Mr. Gambold another visit, and parted with the sacrament.

Tues., December 5th. I was at Convocation; where honest John Chicheley was presented with his degree; having before got orders, for which he came to England.

Thur., December 7th. I read prayers again to the poor prisoners in

Sat., December 9th. I was with the Dean; who complained of my brother's obscurity in his sermon on salvation; and expressly denied the assurance of faith, and earnest of the Spirit.

Sun., December 10th. I preached at the Castle, "All under sin," and helped to administer the sacrament. I read prayers, and preached there again in the afternoon.

Mon., December 11th. I came in the coach to Wycombe. I lodged at Mr. Hollis's, who entertained me with his French Prophets, equal, in his account, if not superior, to the Old-Testament ones. While we were undressing, he fell into violent agitations, and gobbled like a turkey-cock. I was frightened, and began exorcising him with, "Thou deaf and dumb devil," &c. He soon recovered out of his fit of inspiration. I prayed, and went to bed, not half liking my bedfellow. I did not sleep very sound with Satan so near me. I got to London by one the next day. George Whitefield came to J. Bray's soon after me. I was full of vehement desire in prayer. I heard him preach to a vast throng at St. Helen's.

Thur., December 14th. I heard a glorious account of the success of the Gospel at Islington. Some of the fiercest opposers are converted.

Fri., December 15th. At Mr. Stonehouse's I met Mrs. Vaughan, full of joy

in the Holy Ghost, but not without a mixture of nature.

Sat., December 16th. Heather Hobson and her sister called, being sick of love to Christ crucified. My soul, in and after prayer with them, was all desire and expectation.

Sun., December 17th. I met Mr. Broughton at M. Hind's. The last time we had parted good friends, and he thanked me for my friendly offices with Miss Reeves. He now desired me to get from her a discharge.

Mon., December 18th. She told me she fully released him from his promises, but durst not give him a written discharge, lest her brother should cast her off.

Tues., December 19th. I asked my friend Stonehouse, "Dost thou

177

believe in the Son of God?" And he could confidently answer, "Yes, I do, and now know that I believe." We sang (M. Hankinson joining us) in the spirit of faith, and triumphed in the name of the Lord our God.

Thur., December 21st. At St. Antholin's the Clerk asked me my name, and said, "Dr. Venn has forbidden any Methodist to preach. Do you call yourself a Methodist?" "I do not: the world may call me what they please." "Well, Sir," said he, "it is pity the people should go away without preaching. You may preach." I did so, on good works.

Sat., December 23rd. I was deeply affected in singing at Blendon:

retired, and poured out my soul in prayer for love.

Christmas day. I preached at Islington in the morning, and gave the cup: George Stonehouse in the afternoon.

Tues., December 26th. George Whitefield preached. We had the sacrament this and the four following days. On Thursday my brother preached; on Friday, George Whitefield; and on Saturday, Mr. Robson. The whole week was a festival indeed; a joyful season, holy unto the Lord.

178

January 2 - April 30, 1739

TUESDAY, January 2nd, 1739. I was at Mr. Stonehouse's, with M. Vaughan and others. I urged him to throw away his mystics; but he adhered to them with the greater obstinacy. I saw myself in him.

Wed., January 3rd. To-day our sister Butcher died (the first that has) triumphant in the faith. At five she said, "I trust only to the blood of Christ. I cast myself at his feet; and if I perish, I perish." Soon after, "Now I am sure of heaven." Her last breath was spent in exhorting her husband and the rest to confide in Jesus Christ.

Fri., January 5th. My brother, Mr. Seward, Hall, Whitefield, Ingham, Kinchin, Hutchins, all set upon me; but I could not agree to settle at Oxford, without farther direction from God.

Sat., January 6th. Mr. Sparks and I were at Mr. Howard's; who denied any real communion we can have with God.

Sun., January 7th. I was offended much at some orders which Bray, &c., were imposing on the society.

Wed., January 10th. I met Mr. Broughton, who laboured hard to persuade me to make affidavit of what Miss Reeves had said. I positively refused it, as treachery to her, both in him and me.

Mr. Thorold expounded at the Society. We had some discourse about agitations: no sign of grace, in my humble opinion.

Thur., January 11th. I met a Moravian and his wife. She related her genuine conversion: had received forgiveness before the abiding witness of the Spirit.

Sat., January 13th. Pierced with the prayers of Heater Hobson, I expected a fresh manifestation of Christ continually: which I found the next day at the sacrament.

Mon., January 15th. I was at Mr. Stenehouse's when Mr. Silvester came. Mr. Stonehouse insisted upon choosing a Lecturer himself. I attended him to Mr. Lloyd, the Reader. We had close talk of faith. Both he and Mrs. Lloyd are convinced.

Tues., January 16th. I prayed in faith for her. Immediately she was filled with comfort. I called on Mr. Wilde, who tells me, he lately received forgiveness under my sermon.

Wed., January 17th. George Whitefield gave us so promising account of Oxford, that I found myself strongly inclined to go.

Sun., January 21st. I was much affected under Mr. Stonehouse's sermon. I preached myself in the afternoon, to a crowded church, on justification by faith.

Mon., January 22nd. Lady Crisp sent for me. I went, and found Mr. Stonehouse there. She behaved with great courtesy. I transcribed an hymn for Miss. After supper, her Ladyship spoke largely in praise of marriage. I saw, and pitied, my poor friend, sorely beset. We sang. It was late before we parted.

Tues., January 23rd. M. Vaughan seemed deeply humbled, under a sense of her late vain, confident delusions.

Wed., January 24th. I expounded, (for the benefit of two Clergymen present,) "Know ye not, that your bodies are the temples of the Holy Ghost?" and proved the promise of the Spirit to all, both from Scripture and our own Church.

Thur., January 25th. I expounded at Brockmar's. The Lord was present. A woman stopped me departing; confessed herself under the

full power of the devil; fell at my feet. We prayed in confidence. On my mentioning in prayer the absolved adulteress, she cried out. "I have received the comfort!" I rose full of love, and joy, and triumph: whereof we were all partakers.

I was sent for to Bray: the three Miss Newtons were there. I expounded again with power.

Fri., January 26th. At Dr. Newton's I sang and prayed with them: much affected now; well pleased last night.

Sat., January 27th. I carried Bray to Mrs. Whitcomb's; the Claggetts, Metcalf, and his mother, and Hester Hobson were there. We communicated, prayed, and sang with great life and comfort. I slept at

180

Blendon.

Sun., January 28th. I preached on "the three states" at Bexley. Some went out of church: and more in the afternoon, while I expounded,

"Woe is unto me, if I preach not the Gospel." I was quite spent; yet renewed my strength for the poor people at night.

Wed., January 31st. I told Mr. Delamotte he was not converted, had not the Spirit, or faith, and begged him to pray God to show him wherein he was wanting. He could not receive my saying, yet was not angry.

Mrs. Delamotte was quite transported with joy and love. In the stage-

coach with my sister Kez, I found three women, and was very loath to speak; yet broke through, and laboured to convince them of sin and of righteousness. They all assented to the truth, and were, I hope, in some measure awakened to pursue the one thing needful. I left Kez at my aunt's, in Islington. I assisted to expound at the Society, and slept at J. Bray's in peace.

Fri., February 2nd. With Charles Metcalf I visited that worthy man, Zouerbuhler, in the Marshalsea for debt; much moved at his afflictions.

Sun., February 4th. At night walked over the fields from Islington, several of us, with the voice of joy and thanksgiving.

Thur., February 8th. I carried Zouerbuhler the news of his goods being redeemed by Mr. Seward. I visited him again on Saturday, and was drawn in compassion towards him, and faith for him. At Islington I rejoiced over a dying believer.

Sat., February 10th. I expounded to many hundreds at a Society in Beech-lane.

Sun., February 11th. We prayed for utterance this day. My brother preached. I was comforted in the sacrament. I prayed again at Mr. Stonehouse's for a blessing upon my ministry. (Lady Crisp with my

brother.) I read prayers, and preached without notes on blind Bartimeus; the Lord being greatly my helper. Let Him have all the glory. I returned to pray at Mr. Stonehouse's. Miss Crisp asked to be admitted. We had close searching talk, before I expounded to the Society.

181

Mon., February 12th. Mrs. Wheeler tells me, she received Christ last Saturday, being weighed down with the fear of death, and delivered in a moment; melted into love; able to apply Christ and all the promises to herself. Mr. Stonehouse informed me of a woman who had rejected him last week; but now sent for him; received the sacrament; was reconciled to God and him; and died in peace.

Tues., February 13th. I read a letter from Sarah Hurst, pressing me to Oxford, and Cowley (which is now vacant). Quite resigned, I offered myself; opened the book upon those words, "With stammering lips, and with another tongue will he speak to this people." I thought it a prohibition, yet continued without a will. I was with Captain Flatman at the Marshalses; read prayers, and preached from Luke 7:36, the woman washing Christ's feet. The word was with power: all were attentive and thankful. I visited Zouberbuhler, removed to the Fleet.

Wed., February 14th. I read prayers at Newgate, and preached the law

first, and then the Gospel. We sang, "Invitation to sinners." All were affected.

Thur., February 15th. I preached again at the Marshalsea. I was sent for by an harlot, (supposed to be dying,) and preached Christ, the friend of sinners, I trust to her heart. I read prayers at Islington. Miss Crisp asked me home. My Lady was there. We had pertinent discourse. The younger went with me to M. Hankinsoffs; extremely desirous of faith. I prayed for her with great earnestness. At the Society I expounded the woman of Samaria. When I had done, she ran to me, and cried, "I do, I do believe! Those words which you spoke came with power, 'Him that cometh unto me, I will in no wise cast out.' An unknown peace flowed with them into my soul." We sang, rejoiced, and gave thanks to the pardoning God in her behalf.

Sun., February 18th. I preached at Islington, on the woman that was a sinner; at the Marshalsea, from Rom. 3:I prayed by the sick woman: expounded at Sims's to two several companies.

Mon., February 19th. I prayed in the prison with Anne Dodd, well-disposed, weary of sin, longing to break loose. I preached powerfully on the last day. I prayed after God for the poor harlots. Our sisters carried away one in triumph. I followed to M. Hanson's, who took

charge of the returning prodigal. Our hearts were overflowed with pity for her. She seemed confounded, silent, testifying her joy and love

by her tears only. We sang and prayed over her in great confidence.

At three I met Miss Crisp at M. Claggetts, who helped me to rejoice for the lost sheep which I have found. In the evening I expounded at Mr. Hind's. A lady was deeply wounded.

Tues.; February 20th. I waked full of concern for the poor harlot; and began an hymn for her. At five I called on Miss Crisp; then on Mr. Stonehouse, where I expounded the woman taken in adultery.

Wed., February 21st. I heard that Cowley living was disposed of; and rejoiced. With my brother I waited on the Archbishop. He showed us great affection; spoke mildly of Mr. Whitefield; cautioned us to give no more umbrage than was necessary for our own defence; to forbear exceptionable phrases; to keep to the doctrines of the Church. We told him we expected persecution; would abide by the Church till her Articles and Homilies were repealed. He assured us he knew of no design in the governors of the Church to innovate; and neither should there be any innovation while he lived: avowed justification by faith only; and his joy to see us as often as we pleased.

From him we went to the Bishop of London; who denied his having condemned or even heard much of us. G. Whitefield's Journal, he said,

was tainted with enthusiasm, though he was himself a pious, well-meaning youth. He warned us against Antinomianism, and dismissed us kindly.

I went in quest of a lost sheep, and found her coming with Bray from public prayers. She had been in deep distress; pierced with every word at the two last expoundings; almost fainted away this morning, weary and heavy laden. She told Bray, God could not forgive her, her sins were so great. She could not bear our triumph. We wrestled in prayer for her; and she declared her burden taken off, and her soul at peace. The more we prayed, the clearer still she was; till at last she testified that she did believe in Jesus with her whole heart. We continued in mighty prayer for all gross sinners; and I offered myself willingly to be employed peculiarly in their service.

183

Sun., February 25th. I preached justification by faith at Bexley. In the beginning of my discourse about twenty went out of church. They were better pleased with (or at least more patient of) me in the afternoon, while I preached on the woman at our Saviour's feet. Faint, and spent at Blendon, I revived by exhorting above two hundred of the poor.

Mon., February 16th. In our chapel I read Beveridge's sermon on the

ministry, too much wanted by Betsy, and others, who are running into wild notions. The people came at night, and we were all comforted together by the word.

Wed., February 28th. I met the hands at J. Bray's, and cautioned them against schism. I was violently opposed by one who should have seconded me. They urged me to go to Oxford: but I understood them, and begged to be excused.

Sat., March 3rd. I expounded to upward of three hundred hearers at Beech-lane.

Sun., March 4th. I read prayers, and preached, and administered the sacrament at St. Catherine's; at Islington from John ill.; then expounded with much life at Mr. Sims's; and lastly at Mr. Bell's. I concluded the labour of the day with prayer among the bands.

Thur., March 8th. In the midst of earnest prayer at J. Bray's, a woman received power to become a child of God.

Sat., March 10th. I went to Newgate with my usual reluctance; preached with freedom; and in prayer had great power, as all present seemed to confess. I expounded at Beach-lane: in prayer I asked some token, if our Gospel really is a ministration of the Spirit; and I inquired if any had received an answer. One, and another, and another testified

their sense of the divine presence. We rejoiced as men that divide the spoil.

Sun., March 11th. I preached justification at St. Catherine's. I baptized two women at Islington, (five adults I baptized some time before,) and preached with great liberty from the woman of Samaria. My friend Stonehouse was very peevish with me for a trifle, and very warm. I kept my temper, but was hindered in my expounding by his disputes. I

184

encouraged Miss Crisp, now persecuted by her relations. I envied the dead at M. Danghan's. I had serious talk with Stonehouse, in defence of Miss Crisp. Both were humbled.

Mon., March 12th. I was at Newgate with Bray. I prayed, sang, exhorted with great life and vehemence. I talked in the cells to two Papists, who renounced all merit but that of Jesus Christ. I expounded at Bray's on the day of judgment. The power of the Lord was present to wound. A woman cried out as in an agony. Another sank down overpowered. All were moved and melted, as wax before the fire. At eight I expounded on Dowgate-hill. Two were then taken into the fold.

Wed., March 14th. I found one of the Papists full of peace and joy in believing, immediately after we prayed.

Tues., March 20th. A double power and blessing accompanied my

word at Fetter-lane.

Thur., March 22nd. I was at the Marshalsea with Mr. Oakley. I prayed with the sick; read prayers, and expounded the lesson.

Sun., March 25th. Betty Hopson came, and prayed that to-day we might have a feast off fat things. Mr. Stonehouse was full of love, and preached an excellent sermon on faith. After the sacrament we

continued our triumph. I preached with power, "Lazarus raised." Then sang and prayed at the room. Great was our rejoicing in the Lord. I

buried a corpse, and exhorted the congregation. I expounded at Mr.

Stonehouse's with great enlargement. An opposer was troublesome, till we prayed him down. I visited Mr. Lloyd, and then M. Vaughan, both as full of love and joy as they could contain. By midnight I rested with Oakley at J. Bray's.

Tues., March 27th. At Mr. Crouch's I expounded on persecution. A man cried out, "That's a lie." We betook ourselves to prayer and singing.

The shout of a King was in the midst of us. The man came up quite affable. Another asked what that comfort and joy meant: I calmly invited him to experience it.

Wed., March 28th. We dissuaded my brother from going to Bristol, from an unaccountable fear that it would prove fatal to him. A great power was among us. He offered himself willingly to whatsoever the

Lord should appoint. The next day he set out, commended by us to the grace of God. He left a blessing behind. I desired to die with him.

Sun., April 1st. I preached at St. Catherine's, where I met my old friend Mrs. Paine, of East-Grinstead. I administered the sacrament. I dined at Chrissy Anderson's; went in a coach with her and Esther to Islington; comforted in the way while singing. I expounded the good Samaritan, with divine assistance. I prayed at Fetter-lane, that the Lord might be in the midst of us; received a remarkable answer. B. Nowers, in strong pangs, groaned, screamed, roared out. I was not offended by it, - nor called. We sang and praised God with all our might. I could not get home till eleven.

Wed., April 4th. At Mr. West's I rejoiced Over an happy soul, who received faith under my last expounding.

Fri., April 6th. I convinced a woman of sin; found another convinced of righteousness. A man, who had rejected me, was now overpowered.

Mrs. Daniel and Winstone were apprehended by Christ.

Sun., April 15th. At Islington in the vestry, the Churchwardens demanded my licence. I wrote down my name; preached with increase of power, on the woman taken in adultery. None went out. I gave the cup. At night I waited upon Count Zinzendorf with Bray and Hutton.

He received us very cordially; told us of six hundred Moors converted, two hundred Greenlanders, three hundred Hottentots. Greet the brothers and sisters for me. Worship the Spirit of Christ.

We found his prayers answered at the Society. Two received forgiveness; many were filled with unutterable groanings; all received some spiritual gift. We could not Peas; but continued our triumph till the morning.

Mon., April 16th. The Count visited us in Fetter-lane, and answered the several questions we proposed to him. To-day I first saw Miss Raymond, and Mr. Rogers, at the expounding.

Tues., April 17th. I tried in vain to check Mr. Shaw in his wild rambling talk against the Christian priesthood. At last I told him, I would oppose him to the utmost; and either he or I must quit the Society.

186

I assisted Mr. Stonehouse again (as every day this great and holy week) in administering the sacrament. The presence of the Lord was much with us; and again at night, in the word expounded.

Wed., April 18th. I met Shaw at James's. He insisted that there is no priesthood; but he himself could baptize and administer the other sacrament as well as any man. At Mrs. Claggett's I met Mr. Rogers and Miss Raymond; and prayed earnestly for her.

In my expounding, I warned them strongly against schism; into which Shaw's notions must necessarily lead. The Society were all for my brother's immediate return.

Thur., April 19th. I found Mr. Stonehouse exactly right: warned Mrs. Vaughan (Hunter, half-perverted) and Brockmars against Shaw's pestilent errors, and spoke strongly at the Savoy Society, in behalf of the Church of England.

Good-Friday, April 20th. Mrs. Acourt was this day justified, in answer to our prayer. I felt life under Mr. Stonehouse's sermon. From church I went to the house to pray. J. Bray gave me the Gospel for the day to expound. I besought them, in strong words, not to rend the scareless coat by their divisions. J. Bray himself, that pillar of our Church, begins to shake. At night I preached to the Society in Wapping.

Sat., April 21st. I was with James at the Count's, who spoke much against the intended separation of our brethren. I met Metcalf, wholly perverted, a rank Quaker!

Easter-day, April 22nd. I talked with the Count, about motions, visions, dreams, and was confirmed in my dislike to them.

Wed., April 25th. I began Potter on Church Government: a seasonable antidote against the growing spirit of delusion. I heard G. Whitefield,

very powerful, at Fetter-lane. I was with him and Howel Harris, a man after my own heart. George related the dismal effects of Shaw's doctrine at Oxford. Both Howel and he insisted on Shaw's expulsion from the Society. Poor Metcalf had little to say for his friend and master.

Fri., April 27th. I heard G. Whitefield in Islington church-yard. The
187

numerous congregation could not have been more affected within the walls. I exhorted them at Fetter-lane to continue steadfast in the means of grace.

Sat., April 28th. Mr. Stonehouse was much concerned that we should so misunderstand, as if he had forbid G. Whitefield's preaching in his church. To-day he preached out again. After him, Bowers got up to speak: I conjured him not; but he beat me down, and followed his impulse. I carried many away with me. In the evening I expounded at Exall's. A woman received the atonement.

Sun., April 29th. At Islington vestry the Churchwardens forbid my preaching: demanded my local licence. I said nothing but that "I heard them." Scions was very abusive; bidding me shake off the dust of my feet, &c.; and said, "You have all the spirit of the devil," mentioning Mr. Whitefield, Stonehouse, and me by name.

After prayers Mr. Stonehouse made way for me to the pulpit: I offered to go up, when one Cotteril, and a Beadle, forcibly kept me back. I thought of, "The servant of the Lord must not strive;" and yielded. Mr. Streat preached. I assisted at the sacrament. I preached afterwards at our house, and prayed fervently for the opposers. I waited on Justice Elliot. He had gone with Sir John Gunsen into the vestry, and severely chid the Churchwardens; who had made the Clerk read the canon, call a vestry, &c. Mr. Streat advised to ask Mr. Stonehouse to discharge me from ever preaching again.

In the afternoon Scions abused Streat himself at the vestry; abused us; owned he said, "the devil was in us all." I read prayers; Mr. Scott preached. At night I was greatly strengthened to expound, and pray for our persecutors. All were mild and peaceable among the bands. I heard that George had had above ten thousand hearers.

Mon., April 30th. I preached at the Marshalsea. Mr. Stonehouse told us, he had been with the Bishop, but left him close, shut up, sour, refusing to answer but to the written case. At James's I rejoiced to find Charles Metcalf coming back.

May 1 - August 31, 1739

Tues., May 1st During the time of prayers, the Churchwardens still

kept guard on the pulpit-stairs. I was not inclined to fight my way through them. Mr. Stonehouse preached a thundering sermon (unless their consciences seared). I took notes of it. I took water with James for Hastings. A poor harlot was struck down by the word. She, and all, were melted into tears, and prayers, and strong cries for her. I have a good hope this brand will also be plucked out of the fire.

Wed., May 2nd. She was at Fetter-lane, where I expounded the prodigal.

Thur., May 10th. I expounded at Blendon; many fine folk from Eltham attending.

Fri., May 11th. I prayed at Welling, with a dying man, of humility, and faith, and love.

Sun., May 13th. I was enabled to discourse from the at Bexley.

Mon., May 14th. At West's my mouth was opened to expound Rom. 8. Miss Raymond was among my hearers.

Tues., May 15th. She was brought so strongly to my that I was even constrained to pray for her with tears.

Wed., May 16th. I preached with power and freedom in Marshalsea. I prayed by Mrs. Cameron; who owned herself convinced. She had been a Deist, because it is so incredible the Almighty God should condescend to die for his creatures.

I attended G. Whitefield to Blackheath. He preached the rain to many listening sinners. At Fetter-lane a dispute arose about lay-preaching. Many, particularly Bray and Fish, were very zealous for it. Mr. Whitefield and I declared against it.

Sat., May 19th. At the Common, George preached from, "The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee." In the evening I found my brother at Mr. Hodges's.

Sun., May 20th. I received the sacrament at St. Paul's, with best part of our Society.

Mon., May 21st. At Mrs. Claggett's I found Miss Raymond, Rogers, J.

189

Cennick, Harris, Whitefield, Piriam, Mason, the Delamottes. Mr.

Claggett was very friendly, and invited me to Broadoaks.

Tues., May 22nd. Miss Raymond carried me in her coach to Islington.

My friend Stonehouse was delighted to see me. We sang together and prayed, as in the months that are past.

Thur., May 24th. J. Bray took upon him to reprove me for checking the course of the Spirit. I made him no answer; but I believe not every spirit; nor any till I have tried it by the fruits and the written word.

I met Miss Raymond, (as almost every day,) and joined with her and

our friends in prayer and singing. Mr. Claggett pressed me now, with the utmost importunity, to go with him to-morrow.

Fri., May 25th. At noon I set out on horseback; our sisters in the chaise. By two the next day, we surprised Miss Betty at Broadoaks. I was full of prayer, that the Lord would gather a church in this place.

Sun., May 27th. Still Mr. Claggett opposed my preaching. I went to church, where I preached the new birth. We returned singing. Mr. Claggett still more violent. I told him, he was doing the devil's work. Between jest and earnest, he struck me; raged exceedingly to see the people come flocking to the word. God gave me utterance to make known the mystery of the Gospel to four or five hundred listening souls.

Tues., May 29th. Franklyn, a farmer, invited me to preach in his field. I did so, to about five hundred, on, "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand." I returned to the house rejoicing.

Wed., May 30th. I convinced a sick man of unbelief. Another on his death-bed received forgiveness, and witnessed a good confession. I invited near a thousand sinners (with whom the whole house was filled at night) to come weary and heavy-laden to Christ for rest.

Thur., May 31st. A Quaker sent me a pressing invitation to preach at

Thackstead. I scrupled preaching in another's parish, till I had been refused the church. Many Quakers, and near seven hundred others, attended, while I declared in the highways, "The Scripture hath concluded all under sin."

190

Fri., June 1st. My subject, to above one thousand attentive sinners, was, "He shall save his people from their sins." Many showed their emotion by their tears.

Sat., June 2nd. At six I set out for London, with a quiet mind, leaving my beloved friends in the hands of God. The first thing I heard in town was, that my poor friend Stonehouse was actually married. It is a satisfaction to me, that I had no hand in it.

Sun., June 3rd. G. Whitefield advised me (I thank him for his love) to follow Mr. Stonehouse's example. He preached in the morning in Moorfields, and in the evening at Kennington-Common, to an innumerable multitude.

Mon., June 4th. I walked with a young Quaker to Islington church. Satan hindered me; so Mr. Scott baptized him. He told me afterwards, "When the words were speaking, I sensibly found the Holy Ghost descend into my soul; the joy rose higher and higher, till at last I could neither speak nor move; but seemed rapt into the third heaven."

I had some conversation with Mrs. Stonehouse; surely a gracious, lovely soul; then with him. We joined in prayer; and I was better reconciled to their sudden marriage. I met Shaw, the self-ordained Priest. He was brim full of proud wrath and fierceness. His spirit suited to his principles. I could do him no good; but was kept calm and benevolent towards him; therefore he could do me no harm. I stood by G. Whitefield, while he preached on the mount in Blackheath. The cries of the wounded were heard on every side. What has Satan gained by turning him out of the churches

Tues., June 5th. I was with him at Blendon. Bowers and Bray followed us thither, drunk with the spirit of delusion. George honestly said, "They were two grand enthusiasts."

Wed., June 6th. Above sixty of the poor people had passed the night in Mr. Delamotte's barn, singing and rejoicing. I sang and prayed with them before the door. George's exhortation left them all in tears.

At the Society in the evening, Shaw pleaded for his spirit of prophecy; charged me with love of pre-eminence; with making my proselytes twofold more children of the devil than before. Fish said, he looked

upon me as delivered over to Satan, &c. They declared themselves no longer members of the Church of England. We were kept tolerably

meek; and parted at eleven. Now am I clear of them. By renouncing the Church, they have discharged me.

Thur., June 7th. Many of our friends have been pestered by the French Prophets, and such-like Pretenders to inspiration. J. Bray is the foremost to listen to them, and often carried away with their delusions. To-day I had the happiness to find at his house the famous Prophetess Lavington. She was sitting by Bowers; and Mrs. Sellers on the other side. The Prophet Wise asked, "Can a man attain perfection here?" I answered, "No." The Prophetess began groaning. I turned, and said, "If you have anything to speak, speak it." She lifted up her voice, like the lady on the tripod, and cried out vehemently, "Look for perfection; I say absolute perfection!" I was minded to rebuke her; but God gave me uncommon recollection, and command of spirit, so that I sat quiet, and replied not. I offered at last to sing, which she allowed, but did not join. Bray pressed me to stay, and hear her pray. They knelt; I stood. She prayed most pompously, addressing to Bray with particular encomiums. I durst not say, Amen. She concluded with an horrible hellish laugh; and endeavoured to turn it off. She showed violent displeasure against our baptized Quaker, saying, "God had showed her, he would destroy all outward things."

Fri. and Sat., June 8th and 9th. I took the deposition of Anne Graham,

M. Biddle, and M. Rigby, concerning her lewd life and conversation; and warned our friends everywhere against her. I joined at West's with Hutchins and Miss Kinchin, in earnest prayer for the promise of the Father.

Whitsunday, June 10th, 1739. I read the Society my account of the Prophetess. All were shocked but poor J. Bray. He now appeared, and strongly withstood me, and vindicated that Jezebel. I gave no place to him, no, not for a moment. My natural temper was kept down, and changed into a passionate concern for him, which I expressed in prayers and tears. All besides him were melted down. I kissed him, and testified my love; but could make no impression.

Mon., June 11th. I expounded with great liberty of spirit; and found

192

the blessing of opposition.

Tues., June 12th. I heard more of my Prophetess, who told a brother, that she can command Christ to come to her in what shape she pleases; as a dove, an eagle, &c. The devil owed her a shame by bringing her again to Bray's. Wise, her gallant, came first; whom I urged with a plain question, whether he had or had not cohabited with her. He was forced to confess he had. J. Bray was vehement in her

defence; when she came in; flew upon us like a tigress; tried to outface me; insisted that she was immediately inspired. I prayed. She cried, "The devil was in me. I was a fool, a blockhead, a blind leader of the blind; put out the people's eyes," &c. She roared outrageously; said it was the lion in her. (True; but not the Lion of Judah.) She would come to the Society in spite of me: if not, they would all go down.

I asked, "Who is on God's side? Who for the old Prophets rather than the new? Let them follow me." They followed me into the preaching-room. I prayed, and expounded the lesson with extraordinary power. The women, several of them, gave an account of their conversion through my ministry. Our dear brother Bowers confessed himself convinced of his error. We rejoiced and triumphed in the name of the Lord our God.

Wed., June 13th. My brother returned. We had over the Prophetess's affair before the Society. Bray and Bowers were much humbled. All agreed to disown the Prophetess. Brother Hall proposed expelling Shaw and Wolf. We consented, nem. con., that their names should be erased out of the Society-book, because they disowned themselves members of the Church of England.

Thur., June 14th. I heard my brother preach on Black-heath, "Christ our wisdom, righteousness, sanctification, and redemption." We

continued at the Green Man's, singing and rejoicing. George Whitefield gave a lively exhortation to about thirty of us. I slept with Seward and my brother.

Fri., June 15th. The last time I had met Mr. Stonehouse and our opposers in the vestry, he astonished by telling me, "He had consented that I should preach no more." I thought in myself, "What is man or what is friendship" and said nothing. To-day, in company with my

193

brother and him, I mentioned, without intending it, my exclusion through his consent. He pleaded, that the Bishop of London had

justified his Churchwardens in their forcible expulsion of me: but at last was quite melted down; would do anything to repair his fault; resolved no other should be excluded by him, as I had been.

Sun., June 17th. My brother preached to above ten thousand people (as was supposed) in Moorfields, and to a still larger congregation on Kennington-Common. I preached twice in the prison.

Mon., June 18th. I sang and prayed at Mrs. Euster's, a lively, gracious soul; but too apt to depend on her inward feelings.

Tues., June 19th. I was at Lambeth with Mr. Piers. His Grace expressly forbade him to let any of us preach in his church: charged us with breach of the canon. I mentioned the Bishop of London's authorizing

my forcible exclusion. He would not hear me; said he did not dispute.

He asked me what call I had. I answered, "A dispensation of the Gospel is committed to me." "That is, to St. Paul; but I do not dispute: and will not proceed to excommunication YET." "Your Grace has taught me in your book on Church Government, that a man unjustly excommunicated is not thereby cut off from communion with Christ."

"Of that I am the judge." I asked him, if Mr. Whitefield's success was not a spiritual sign, and sufficient proof of his call: recommended

Gamaliel's advice. He dismissed us; Piers, with kind professions; me, with all the marks of his displeasure.

I felt nothing in my heart but peace. I prayed and sang at Bray's: but some hours after, at West's, sank down in great heaviness and discouragement. I found a little relief from the scripture that first offered: Acts 17:8: Opening and alleging, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead; and that this Jesus, whom I preach unto you, is Christ."

Fri., June 22nd. The sower of tares is beginning to trouble us with disputes about predestination. My brother was wonderfully owned at Wapping last week, while asserting the contrary truth. To-night I asked in prayer, that if God would have all men to be saved, he would show some token for good upon us. Three were justified in immediate

answer to that prayer. We prayed again; several fell down under the

194

power of God, present to witness his universal love.

Sat., June 23rd. Some of the persons set at liberty came, and called on me to return him thanks in their behalf, Twelve received forgiveness, it seems, last night; another in this hour. I dined at Mr. Stonehouse's.

My inward conflict continued. I perceived it was the fear of man; and that, by preaching in the field next Sunday, as George Whitefield urges me, I shall break down the bridge, and become desperate. I retired, and prayed for particular direction; offering up my friends, my liberty, my life, for Christ's sake and the Gospel's. I was somewhat less burdened could not be quite easy, till I gave up all.

Sun., June 24th. St. John Baptist's day. The first scripture I cast my eye upon, was, "Then came the servant unto him, and said, Master, what shall we do?" I prayed with West, and went forth in the name of Jesus Christ. I found near ten thousand helpless sinners waiting for the word, in Moorfields. I invited them in my Master's words, as well as name: "Come unto me, all ye that travail, and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest." The Lord was with me, even me, his meanest messenger, according to his promise. At St. Paul's, the Psalms, Lemons,

&c., for the day, put fresh life into me. So did the sacrament. My load was gone, and all my doubts and scruples. God shone upon my path; and I knew this was his will concerning me. At Newington, the Rector, Mr. Motte, desired me to preach. My text was, "All have sinned, and come short of the glory of God; being justified freely," &c. I walked on to the Commons and cried to multitudes upon multitudes, "Repent ye, and believe the Gospel." The Lord was my strength, and my mouth, and my wisdom. O that all would therefore praise the Lord for his goodness! I was refreshed with the Society, at a primitive love feast. Fri., June 29th. At Wycombe I heard of much disturbance and sin, occasioned by Bowers's preaching in the streets. I reached Oxford the next day.

Sat., June 30th. I waited upon the Dean, who spoke with unusual severity against field-preaching and Mr. Whitefield: explained away all inward religion, and union with God.

That the world, and their God, abhor our manner of acting, I have too sensible proof. This whole week has the messenger of Satan been

195

buffering me with uninterrupted temptation.

Sun., July 1st I preached my sermon on justification before the University, with great boldness. All were very attentive. One could not

help weeping. At night I received power to expound; several Gownsmen were present; some mocked.

Mon., July 2nd. Mr. Gambold came. He had been with the Vice-Chancellor, and well received. I visited the Vice-Chancellor, at his own desire: gave him a full account of the Methodists; which he approved: but objected the irregularity of our doing good in other men's parishes; charged Mr. Whitefield with insincerity, and breach of promise; appealed to the Dean, and appointed a second meeting there. All were against my sermon, as liable to be misunderstood.

Tues., July 3rd. Poor wild Bowers had been laid hold on for preaching in Oxford. To-day the Beadle brought him to me. I spoke to him very home. He had nothing to reply; but promised to do so no more; and thereby obtained his liberty.

At night I had another conference with the Dean; who cited Mr. Whitefield to judgment. I said, "Mr. Dean, he shall be ready to answer your citation." He used his utmost address to bring me off from preaching abroad, from expounding in houses, from singing psalms: denied justification by faith only, and all vital religion: promised me, however, to read Law and Pascal.

Wed., July 4th. I returned to London.

Sun., July 8th. Near ten thousand, by computation, gave diligent heed to the word preached in Moorfields: "Thou shalt call his name Jesus; for he shall save his people from their sins." Numbers seemed greatly affected. Walking over an open field to Kennington-Common, I was met by a man, who threatened me for a trespass. I preached "Christ our wisdom, righteousness, sanctification, and redemption," to double my morning congregation: and the Lord Almighty bowed their hearts before him.

Mon., July 9th. I corrected Mr. Cennick's hymns for the press.

Tues., July 10th. I stepped Oakley, just going to Germany; and brought

196

him quite off his design. Mrs. H., a brand plucked out of the burning through my brother's ministry, told me her wonderful history, which filled my heart with pity and love.

Sat., July 14th. Many were pierced through this evening with the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

Sun., July 15th. My subject in Moorfields was, "God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself:" on the Common, "Blessed are the poor in spirit."

Sun., July 22nd. I never knew till now the strength of temptation, and energy of sin. Who, that conferred with flesh and blood, would covet

great success I live in a continual storm. My soul is always in my hand. The enemy thrusts sore at me, that I may fall; and a worse enemy than the devil is my own heart. I am surprised that anyone can be saved! I received, I humbly hope, a fresh pardon in the sacrament at St. Paul's. I would have preached at the Fleet; but the Warden forbad. I preached at the Marshalsea.

Mon., July 23rd. I talked in Newgate with five condemned malefactors.

Wed., July 26th. I was served with a writ by Mr. Gofer, for walking over his field to Kennington. I sent Oakley to the Lawyer, who confessed he did not so much as know what his client sued me for.

I saw Dr. Doddridge at Mr. Burnham's; but did not see much of him.

Thur., July 26th. The Lord applied his word at Bray's, so that one received forgiveness under it.

Sat, August 4th. I dined with my friend George Whitefield at Mrs.

Sparrow's, in Lewisham. In the evening at Mrs. Euster's; whom I visit most days for my own sake.

Sun., August 5th. In the fields, I discoursed on the promise, "I will pray the Father, and he shall send you another Comforter" My subject was

the same at Kennington. In the bands, one witnessed her having received her pardon. We gave thanks with her, whom the Lord hath redeemed.

Tues., August 7th. I preached repentance and faith at Plaistow: and at

197

night expounded, in a private house, Lazarus dead and raised. The next day I called with Hedges on Thomas Keen, a mild and candid

Quaker: preached at Marybone. Too well pleased with my success,

which brought upon me the buffeting of Satan. I preached on

Kennington-Commons "Repent ye, and believe the Gospel."

Fri., August 10th. I gave George Whitefield some account both of my labours and my conflicts.

"Dear George, - I forgot to mention the most material occurrence at Plaistow; namely, that a Clergyman was there convinced of sin. He stood under me, And appeared, throughout my discourse, under the strongest perturbation of mind. In our return we were much delighted with an old spiritual Quaker, who is clear in justification by faith only. At Marybone a footman was convinced of more than sin; and now waits with confidence for all the power of faith. Friend Keen seems to have experience, and is right in the foundation.

"I cannot preach out on the week-days for the expense of coach, nor accept of dear Mr. Seward's offer; to which I should be less backward, would he take my advice. But while he is so lavish of his Lord's goods, I cannot consent that this ruin should in any degree to be under my

hand.

"I am continually tempted to leave off preaching, and hide myself like J. Hutchins. I should then be freer from temptation, and at leisure to attend my own improvement, God continues to work by me, but not in me, that I can perceive. Do not reckon upon me, my brother, in the work God is doing: for I cannot expect he should long employ one who is ever longing and murmuring to be discharged. I rejoice in your success, and pray for its increase a thousand fold."

To-day I carried J. Bray to Mr. Law, who resolved all his feelings and experiences into fits or natural affections, and advised him to take no notice of his comforts, which he had better be without than with. He blamed Mr. Whitefield's Journals, and way of proceeding; said, he had had great hopes, that the Methodists would have been dispersed by little and little into livings, and have leavened the whole lump. I told him my experience. "Then am I," said he, "far below you, (if you are right,) not worthy to bear your shoes." He agreed to our notion of

198

faith, but would have it, that all men held it: was fully against the laymen's expounding, as the very worst thing, both for themselves and others. I told him, he was my schoolmaster to bring me to Christ; but the reason why I did not come sooner to Him, was, my seeking to be

sanctified before I was justified. I disclaimed all expectation of becoming some great one.

Among other things, he said, "Was I so talked of as Mr. Whitefield is, I should run away, and hide myself entirely." "You might," I answered; "but God would bring you back like Jonah." Joy in the Holy Ghost, he told us, was the most dangerous thing God could give. I replied, "But cannot God guard his own gifts?" He often disclaimed advising, "seeing we had the Spirit of God;" but mended upon our hands, and at last came almost quite over.

Sun., August 12th. I received power, great power, to explain the good Samaritan. I communicated at St. Paul's, as every Sunday. I convinced multitudes at the Common from, "Such were some of you; but ye are washed," &c.; and before the day was past, felt my own sinfulness so great, that I wished I had never been born.

Mon., August 13th. I wrote, in a letter to Seward, "I preached yesterday to more than ten thousand hearers: am so buffeted, both before and after, that, was I not forcibly detained, I should fly from every human face. If God does make a way for me to escape, I shall not easily be brought back again. I cannot like advertising. It looks like sounding a trumpet.

"I hope our brother Hutchins will come forth at last, and throw away,

which he seems to have taken up, my mantle of reserve. But then he will no longer make Mr. Broughton his counsellor."

Tues., August 14th. I carried Cossart, a Moravian, to Mr. Law, and left them together. The whole congregation at Kennington seemed moved by my discourse on those words, "He shall reprove the world of sin, of righteousness, and of judgment." I could hardly get from them. We hear every day of more and more convinced or pardoned.

Wed., August 15th. I wrote to George Whitefield, "Let not Cossart's opinion of your letter to the Bishop weaken your hands. Abundant

199

caution does no harm. It is the Moravian infirmity. To-morrow I set out for Bristol. I pray you all a good voyage, and that many poor souls

may be added to the church by your ministry, before we meet again.

Meet again, I am confident we shall; perhaps both here and in

America. The will of the Lord be done with us, and by us, in time and in eternity."

I called on our brother Bell, just as his wife received "like precious faith;" We were all partakers of her joy.

Thur., August 16th. I rode to Wycombe; and, being refused the church, would have preached in an house; but Bowers's preaching here has shut the door against me, by confirming their natural aversion to the

Gospel. The next day we came to Oxford, and the day after that to Evesham.

I sent my brother and friends accounts of our going on from time to time: the following to my brother: -

"Bengeworth and Evesham, August 20th, 1739.

"Dear Brother, - We left the brethren at Oxford much edified, and two gownsmen, besides C. Graves, thoroughly awakened. On Saturday afternoon God brought us hither. Mr. Seward being from home, there was no admittance for us, his wife being an opposer, and having refused to see G. Whitefield before me. At seven Mr. Seward found us at our inn, and carried us home. I expounded at eight in the school-room, which contains two hundred; and held out the promises from John 16: 'I will send the Comforter,' &c. "On Sunday morning I preached from George Whitefield's pulpit, the wall, 'Repent ye, and believe the Gospel.'

The notice being short, we had only a few hundreds, but such as those described in the morning lesson, 'These were more noble than those of Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind; In the evening I showed to near two thousand their Saviour in the good Samaritan. Many, I am persuaded, found themselves

stripped, and wounded, and half-dead: and are therefore ready for the oil and wine. Once more God strengthened me at nine to open the new covenant at the school-house which was crowded with deeply

200

attentive sinners"

Mon., August 20th. I spoke from Acts 2:87 to two or three hundred market-people and soldiers; all as orderly and decent as could be desired. I now heard that the Mayor had come down on Sunday to take a view of us; and soon after an officer struck a countryman in the face, without any provocation. A serious woman besought the poor man not to resist evil, as the other only wanted to make a riot. He took patiently several repeated blows, telling the man he might beat him as long as he pleased.

I took a walk with Mr. Seward, whose eyes it has pleased God to open, to see he would have all men to be saved. His wife, who refuses to see me, is miserably bigoted to the particular scheme.

We had the satisfaction of meeting with Mr. Seward's cousin Molly, whom I had endeavoured to convince of sin at Islington. The Spirit has now convinced her of righteousness also. To-day she told us a young lady here upon a visit had been deeply struck on Sunday night, under

the word, seeing and feeling her need of a physician; and earnestly desired me to pray for her. We immediately joined in thanksgiving and intercession. After dinner I spoke with her. She burst into tears; told us she had come hither thoughtless and dead in pleasures and sin, but resolved against ever being a Methodist; that she was alarmed at seeing us so happy and full of love; had gone to the Society, but never found herself out, till the word came with power to her soul; that all the following night she had been as in an agony; could not pray; could not bear our singing, nor have any rest in her spirit. We betook ourselves to prayer; and God hearkened. She received forgiveness in that instant, and triumphed in the name of the Lord her God. We were all of us upon the mount the rest of the day.

At six I explained the nature of faith from, "Not I, but Christ liveth in me, - who loved me, and gave himself for me." Afterwards I showed them, in the school-house, their own case in dead Lazarus. Some of those that were dead, I trust, begin to come forth. Several serious people from the neighbouring towns came home with us. We continued our rejoicings till midnight.

Tues., August 21st. I besought my hearers to be reconciled unto God. I

201

found Miss P. had been greatly strengthened by last night's

expounding, and could scarce forbear crying out, "She was that Lazarus; and if they would come to Christ, he would raise them, as he had her." All night she continued singing in her heart; and discovers more and more of that genuine mark of his disciples, love.

I was prevailed upon to stay over this day. God soon showed us his design in it. Our singing in the garden drew two sincere women to us, who sought Christ sorrowing. After reading the promises in Isaiah, we prayed, and they received them accomplished in themselves. We were upon a mount, which reminded us of Tabor, through the joy wherewith our Master filled us. How shall I be thankful enough for his bringing me hither? While we were singing, a poor drunken servant of Mr. Seward's was struck. His master had last night given him warning; but now he seems effectually called. We spent the afternoon most delightfully in Isaiah. At seven the Society met. I could hardly speak through my cold; but it was suspended, while I showed the natural man his picture in blind Bartimeus.

Many were ready to cry after Jesus for mercy. The three that had lately received their sight were much strengthened. Miss P. declared her cure before two hundred witnesses; many of them gay young gentlewomen. They received her testimony, flocked round about her,

and pressed her on all sides to come to see them. By this open confession, she purchased to herself great boldness in the faith.

Wed., August 22nd. This morning the work upon poor Robin appeared to be God's work. The words that made the first impression were, "Tis mercy all, immense and free, For, O my God, it found out me!"

He now seems full of sorrow, and joy, and astonishment, and love. The world, too, set to their seal that he belongs to Christ.

Here I cannot but observe the narrow spirit of those that hold particular redemption. I have had no disputes with them, yet they have me in abomination. Mrs. Seward is irreconcilably angry with me; "for he offers Christ to all." Her maids are of the same spirit; and their Baptist teacher insisted that I ought to have my gown stripped over my ear.

202

When Mr. Seward, in my hearing, exhorted one of the maids to a concern for her salvation, she answered, "It was to no purpose; she could do nothing." The same answer he received from his daughter, of seven years old. See the genuine fruits of this blessed doctrine!

"Gloucester, August 23rd.

"By ten last night the Lord brought us hither through many dangers and difficulties. In mounting, I fell over my horse, and sprained my

hand. Riding in the dark, I bruised my foot. We lost our way as often as we could. Two horses we had between three; for Robin bore us company. Here we were turned back from a friend's house, by his wife's sickness. Last night my voice and strength wholly failed me. To-day they are in some measure restored. At night I with difficulty got in to the crowded Society; preached the law and the Gospel from Rom. 3. They received it with all readiness. Three Clergymen were present. Some without attempted to make a disturbance by setting on the dogs, but in vain: the dumb dogs rebuked the rioters."

"Gloucester, August 25th.

"Before I went forth into the streets and highways, I sent, after my custom, to borrow the church. The Minister (one of the better disposed) sent back a civil message, that he would be glad to drink a glass of wine with me, but durst not lend me his pulpit for fifty guineas.

"Mr. Whitefield durst lend me his field, which did just as well. For near an hour and a half God gave me voice and strength to exhort about two thousand sinners to repent and believe the Gospel. My voice and strength failed together; neither do I want them when my work is done. Being invited to Painswick, I waited upon the Lord, and renewed my strength. We found near one thousand gathered in the street. I

have but one subject, on which I discoursed from 2 Cor. 5:19: 'God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself.' I besought them earnestly to be reconciled, and the rebels seemed inclinable to lay down their arms. A young Presbyterian teacher came to us. I received fresh strength to expound the good Samaritan, at a public-house, which was full above stairs and below"

203

Sat., August 25th. I showed them in the street, that to them and to their children was the promise made. Some are, I trust, on the point of receiving it. Three Clergymen attended. I prayed by a young woman, afraid of death, because it had not lost its sting. I showed her, the promise was to those that are afar off, even before they actually receive it; if they can but trust that they shall receive it. This revived her much; and we left her patiently waiting for the salvation of God. At nine I exhorted and prayed with an house full of sincere souls; and took my leave, recommended by their affectionate prayers to the grace of God.

At Gloucester I received an invitation from F. Drummond. I dined with her and several of the friends, particularly Josiah Martin, a spiritual man, as far as I can discern. My heart was enlarged, and knit to them in love. I went to the field at five. An old intimate acquaintance (Mrs.

Kirkham) stood in my way, and challenged me, "What, Mr. Wesley, is it you I see Is it possible that you who can preach at Christ-church, St. Mary's, &c., should come hither after a mob?" I cut her short with, "The work which my Master giveth me, must I not do it?" and went to my mob, or (to put it in the Pharisees' phrase) this people which is accursed. Thousands heard me gladly, while I told them their privilege of the Holy Ghost, the Comforter, and exhorted them to come for him to Christ as poor lost sinners. I continued my discourse fill night.

"Runwlck, August 26th.

"The Minister here lent me his pulpit. I stood at the window, (which was taken down,) and turned to the larger congregation of above two thousand, in the church-yard. They appeared greedy to hear, while I testified, 'God so loved the world, that he gave his only-begotten Son,' &c. These are, I think, more noble than those at Evesham.

"After sermon, a woman came to me, who had received faith in hearing Mr. Whitefield. She was terrified at having lost her comfort. I explained to her that wilderness-state into which the believer is generally led by the Spirit to be tempted, as soon as he is baptized by the Holy Ghost. This confirmed her in a patient looking for His return whom her soul loveth.

"We dined at Mr. Ellis's of Ebly. I met our brother Ellis, who has the blessing of believing parents; two sisters awakened; one only brother continues an abandoned prodigal. In the afternoon I preached again to a Kennington congregation. The church was full as it could crowd.

Thousands stood in the church-yard. It was the most beautiful sight I ever beheld. The people filled the gradually-rising area, which was shut up on three sides by a vast perpendicular hill. On the top and bottom of this hill was a circular row of trees. In this amphitheatre they stood, deeply attentive, while I called upon them in Christ's words, 'Come unto me, all that are weary.' The tears of many testified that they were ready to enter into that rest. God enabled me to lift up my voice like trumpet; so that all distinctly heard me. I concluded with singing an invitation to sinners.

"It was with difficulty we made our way through this most loving people, and returned amidst their prayers and blessings to Ebly. Here I expounded the second lesson for two hours, and received strength and faith to plead the promise of the Father. A good old Baptist pressed me to preach at Stanley, in my way to Bristol." Accordingly, Mon., August 27th, I set out at seven. The sky was overcast, and the Prince of the power of the air wetted us to the skin. This, I thought,

portended good. We could not stay to dry ourselves, there being, contrary to our expectation, a company of near one thousand waiting. I preached from a table, (having been first denied the pulpit,) upon, "Repent, and believe the Gospel." The hearers seemed so much affected, that I appointed them to meet me again in the evening. The Minister was of my audience.

I rode back to Ebly, and was informed by brother Oakley, that he had fastened upon the poor prodigal, and spoke to his heart. His convictions were heightened by the sermon. We prayed and sang alternately, till faith came.

God blew with his wind, and the waters flowed. He struck the hard rock, and the waters gushed out, and the poor sinner, with joy and astonishment, believed the Son of God loved him, and gave himself for him. Sing, ye heavens, for the Lord hath done it; shout, ye lower parts of the earth!

205

In the morning I had told his mother the story of St. Austin's conversion. Now I carried her the joyful news, "This thy son was dead, and is alive again." I expounded at a gentlewoman's house, in my way to Stanley, but could hardly speak through my cold. I went forth in faith, and preached under a large elm- tree, on the prodigal son, and

returned to Ebly rejoicing; where I expounded the woman of Samaria.

Tues., August 28th. In the evening I accompanied my brother to the preaching-room, in the Horsefair, Bristol. A drunken Quaker (Benjamin Rutter) made a great disturbance by bawling out for his wife. Some of the brethren hardly saved him from the mob.

Wed., August 29th. At six o'clock we had prayers, with a large company of our brethren and sisters, who have learned of Christ to come to the temple, early in the morning. None of them as yet think it part of their Christian liberty, to forsake the means of grace. I spent the day with my brother in visiting several of the Society.

Thur., August 30th. My brother expounded, and took leave of them. His short absence cost them many tears.

Fri., August 31st. I entered upon my ministry at Weaver's-hall, and began expounding Isaiah, with much freedom and power. They were melted into tears all around. So again at one, when the bands met to keep the church-fast. We were all of one heart and of one mind. I was much carried out in pleading the promises; forgot the contradiction wherewith they grieved my spirit at London; fell all at once into the strictest intimacy with these delightful souls; and could not forbear saying, "It is good for me to be here."

I spoke to the poor colliers on, "The blind receive their sight, the lame walk," &c. Then began the Gospel at Gloucester-lane, and preached

with power on, "Thou shalt call his name Jesus; for," &c. I went home to Mr. Grevil's, stronger in body than when I rose.

September 1 - November 6, 1739

Sat., September 1st. At five I preached for the first time at the Bowling-green, in the heart of the city, and called all the weary and heavy-laden to Christ. None offered to go away, though it rained hard. The power of the Lord was in the midst; which forced one woman to cry out

206

vehemently. I began the Romans at Weaver's-hall. The hearers appeared deeply affected.

Sun., September 2nd. There was supposed to be above four thousand at the Bowling-green. My subject was, "To you and to your children is the promise made." Many experienced the great power of truth. I received the sacrament at St. Nicholas; dined at M.N.'S, full of faith and love. I prayed by Mr. Coulston, desirous to be with Christ.

I preached at Rose-green, to near five thousand souls, upon, "God so loved the world." They heard me patiently; and some gladly. I was quite spent by the time I got to Weaver's-hall. The scoffers gave me new life. For two hours I preached the law; and then was fresh for the

love-feast. We could not part before eleven.

Mon., September 3rd. I had some discourse with a gentleman, who had been offended at the cryings out. My sermon upon the Holy Ghost had been blessed to his conviction, and stripped him of his outside Christianity. I found Weaver's-hall as full as it could hold; and proceeded in Isaiah. I dined with the gentleman above mentioned, and spoke fully and strongly of the things of the kingdom. Then read him my own case. He laid down his arms, confessed he knew nothing yet as he ought to know; and is now looking for that faith which is the gift of God.

I preached at the brick-yard, to upwards of five thousand, from 1 Cor. 6:9. I marvelled at their taking it so patiently, when I showed them they were all adulterers, thieves, idolaters, &c. Then expounded John 2 in Gloucester-lane, with demonstration of the Spirit. I spent a delightful hour in prayer with a band; and were all melted into a sense of our deep poverty.

Tues., September 4th. I talked with poor despairing Lucretia. Never did I find greater faith in pleading the promises for any one; yet there was no answer; which convinces me that it is good for the choicest of God's children to receive (and that for a long time) the sentence of

death in themselves. I have not found such depth of distress, no, not in Hetty Delamotte.

At four I preached over against the school in Kingswood, to some

207

thousands, (colliers chiefly,) and held out the promises, from Isaiah 35: "The wilderness and the solitary place shall be glad for them; and the desert shall rejoice, and blossom as the rose." I triumphed in God's mercy to these poor outcasts, (for he hath called them a people who

were not a people,) and in the accomplishment of that scripture,
"Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf
shall be unstopped; then shall the lame man leap as an hart, and the
tongue of the dumb sing; for in the wilderness shall water break out,
and streams in the desert." O how gladly do the poor receive the
Gospel: We hardly knew how to part.

Just as I began in Weaver's-hall, the devil set up his throat in Benjamin
Eutter. I took that occasion to convince the hearers of sin; of the very
sin of that poor reprobate. The chapter expounded was Rom. 2. To God
be all the glory that I spoke convincingly.

Wed., September 5th. I was much discouraged by a farther discovery
of the disorderly walking of some, who have given the adversary
occasion to blaspheme, by their rioting and drunkenness. I am a poor
creature on such occasions, being soon cast down, as in the case of
Shaw and the Prophetess. Yet I went and talked with them. God filled
me with such love to their souls, as I have not known before. They
could not stand before it. I joined with Oakley and Cennick in prayer
for them. M. trembled exceedingly. The others gave us great cause to
hope for their recovery. The same power continued with me, at the
women's society, whom I reproved, in love and simplicity, for their

lightness, dress, self-indulgence. I then exhorted the men to self-denial, and a constant use of the means of means. God greatly enlarged our hearts in prayer.

Thur., September 6th. I had my gentleman (now a little child) to breakfast, and surprised him much by Isaiah's promises. I dined at M.

Ayres's, "sick of" desire, if not of "love." I rode with Dashamps, to Publow, where I preached from, "God so loved the world." I spake with great boldness at night on my favourite subject, justification by faith

only; and triumphed in the irresistible force of that everlasting truth.

Fri., September 7th. At Weaver's-hall I expounded Isaiah 3, where the

Prophet alike condemns notorious profligates, worldly-minded men,

208

and well-dressed ladies. God was with us in our meeting to keep the fast. I went to see one in her last agony, but thoroughly sensible of her

dreadful condition; preached Christ to her, and prayed in faith. She

showed all imaginable signs of eager desire; and died within an hour.

How comfortable is it that I can now hope for her, so often as I have disputed the possibility of a death-bed repentance!

The house and yards of S. England were crowded as usual. The

scripture from which I discoursed was John 1. God was with my

mouth. I preached and prayed believing. I was led to ask a sign of

God's universal love. He always answers that prayer. A poor ignorant man stood up, as God's witness, that in Christ he had redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins; that he knew and felt it by such a love to every human soul, as he was hardly able to bear. He spoke with a simplicity which was irresistible. We all confessed that God was with him of a truth. Our prayers were answered on M. Ayres likewise; which she testified before us all.

Sat., September 8th. Two women came to me, who had received the atonement last night, while the man was speaking, and were filled with unknown love to all mankind. We observed the thanksgiving-day at M. England's, and found the benefit of joint prayers and praises. At the bowling-green, I prayed God to direct me what to preach upon, and opened on Ezekiel's vision of the dry bones: "So I prophesied as I was commanded: and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and, behold, a slinking!" The breath of God attended his word. A man sunk down under it. A woman screamed for mercy, so as to drown my voice. Never did I see the like power among us. Coming home I met M. Skinner, who told me she had found Christ at the expounding last Monday, and went home full of melting joy and love.

At the room I preached from Rom. 4. God set to his seal. A woman

testified she had then received the witnessing Spirit; was sure her sins were forgiven; full of love and joy in the Holy Ghost; knew Christ was hers, and could even, as she said, fly away to heaven. Another declared she had never been able to apply the promises till last night, but then received the power; knew Christ died for her; said, she had laboured many years to justify herself, and warned us earnestly not to do as she had done; not to mingle our own works with the blood of Christ.

209

Sun., September 9th. At the bowling-green I preached on, "When he is come, he shall convince the world of sin, and of righteousness," &c.

The green was quite full. I never spoke more searchingly. I would have passed on to the second office of the Spirit, convincing of righteousness, but was again and again brought back, and constrained to dwell upon the law. As often as I returned, some Pharisees quitted the field; feeling the sharpness of the two-edged sword.

Two thousand at Rose-green stood patient in the rain, while I explained how the Spirit convinces of righteousness and of judgment. After sermon, a poor collier afforded me matter of rejoicing (his wife received the atonement some days before). He had been with me before; owned he was the wickedest fellow alive a month ago; but now finds no rest in his flesh by reason of his sin. Observing him much

dejected yesterday at the thanksgiving, I asked him if he was sick. "No, no," he answered; "my sickness is of my soul." Here he informed me he had come home with such weight upon him, that he was ready to sink.

It continued all night; but joy and deliverance came in the morning. He was lightened of his load, and now declared that he believed in Jesus.

The room was excessively crowded. I spoke to their hearts from Rom.

5. Two who had been scoffing, desired our prayers for them. For between two and three hours God strengthened me for his work.

Mon., September 10th. At the Hall, while I was expounding Isai. iv., a

man perceived his filth purged away by the Spirit of judgment and

burning. Sarah Norton, & Presbyterian, followed me home under

strong convictions. We prayed and trembled before the face of God.

She is not far from the kingdom of heaven. Two simple souls, Mary Fry

and .lane Clansy, now informed me, that God filled them on Friday

evening with love and joy unspeakable. They expressed so much of it,

and have been so tempted since, that I could not doubt of their being accepted.

I conversed and prayed with M. Hooper. I have a good hope that the

Sun of righteousness is risen upon her, with healing in his wings.

I preached in the brick-yard, where I think there could not be less than

four thousand. It rained hard, yet none stirred. I spoke with great

freedom and power. A woman cried out, and dropped down. I spoke to

210

her at M. Norman's, and found she had sunk under the weight of sin.

At Gloucester-lane I discoursed two hours on John 3. A notorious drunkard gave glory to God, declaring he had found mercy last night, through faith in Jesus Christ. This stirred the Pharisee in a woman's soul, and she cried out against him most vehemently. I took and turned her inside out, and showed her her spirit in those who murmured at Christ for receiving sinners. A woman of a broken spirit testified she had found redemption through his blood, when I preached last at Baptist-Mills. We daily discover more and more who are begotten again by the word of God's power, or awakened to a sense of sin, or edified in the faith.

Tues., September 11th. I took horse with Deshamp and Wigginton.

The wind and rain almost confounded us. We got to Bradford by noon.

Many were gone away, despairing of my coming. However, I found upward of a thousand, whom I called upon to repent, and believe the Gospel. I was forced to exert my voice to the utmost. They appeared much affected; especially a young woman, and a very old man, who wept all the time like children.

We dined at Freshford. In our return, I could scarce sit my horse, the wind and rain were so troublesome. I got, almost senseless, to Bristol; and to the room, but could not stand; yet spoke, I know not how, for an hour, and hastened to bed, utterly exhausted.

The Pharisee, who protested last night against Christ's receiving sinners, sent to-night to desire our prayers, being in an agony of conviction. Some have since informed me, that they observed her turn pale while I spoke. Her soul and body sympathize now. The Lord show himself the Physician of both!

The woman, I have just heard, whose soul and spirit were pierced and divided asunder last Sunday, was a stranger, wholly unawakened till that moment; an opposer, say some, and little better than an atheist.

When they rebuked her that she should hold her peace, her answer was, "I am not mad, or out of my senses; but I must cry, and I will cry, to Christ for mercy, while I have any breath in me."

Wed., September 12th. I rose half dead with the headache. I

211

breakfasted at Mr. Page's, but could neither lift up my head nor speak.

I went to a friend's, where I met poor Mr. W_____n; a sweet youth. I was much concerned for him. I cannot doubt his sincerity, or despair of his

return. He was ready to hear, childlike and teachable, convinced of his fall. He thanked, and I believe loves, me. The world have taken the alarm, that he designs to desert them a second time.

This conference abated my headache. Expounding at the Hall gave me more strength. After talking two hours with the poor people that came to me, and preaching at Baptist-Mills, I was perfectly well.

Thur., September 13th. I breakfasted at M. Davis', a genuine child of God, and stayed till noon, transcribing Isaiah. Providence threw me on Mr. W____n, just as he was leaving Bristol. He cannot long hold out, without an alteration; is himself sensible of it, and that the promises are not fulfilled in him; but trusts they shall before he goes hence. I have great love and faith for him.

Many were convinced at the room this evening, by my exposition of Rom. 7.

Fri., September 14th. I talked with two more women, who lately received peace through my ministry. In the evening, while I was expounding the woman of Samaria Christ called forth two of his witnesses, who declared they now believed, because they had heard him of his own mouth.

Sat., September 15th. Having been provoked to speak unadvisedly

with my lips, I preached on the bowling-green in great weakness, on,
"Lazarus, come forth!" I was surprised that any good should be done; but
God quickens others by those who are dead themselves. A man
came to me, and declared he had now received the Spirit of life. So did
a woman at the same time; which she openly confessed at Weaver's-
hall. We had great power among us, while I displayed the believer's
privileges, from Rom. 8. Another woman then stood forth, and
testified, "I have the witness of God's Spirit with my spirit, that I am a child
of God." It was a most triumphant night indeed.

Sun., September 16th. I took coach at six with Mr. and Mrs. Wigginton,
Mr. Smith, and M. Grevil, for Hanham-Mount. I expounded the good

212

Samaritan to between three and four thousand, with power. While I was
repeating that in Jeremiah, "Is not my word like a fire, saith the
Lord, and like an hammer that breaketh the rock in pieces?" a woman
fell down under the stroke of it. I found afterwards, that the Good
Samaritan had poured in his oil, and made her whole. Another
declared He had then bound up her wounds also. I heard on all sides
the Sighing of them that were in captivity, and trust more than I know
of were set at liberty; for the Lord was among us of a truth.

I met between thirty and forty colliers with their wives at Mr. Willis's,

and administered the sacrament to them; but found no comfort myself, in that or any ordinance. I always find strength for the work of the ministry; but when my work is over, my strength, both bodily and spiritual, leaves me. I can pray for others, not for myself. God by me strengthens the weak hands, and confirms the feeble knees; yet am I myself as a man in whom is no strength. I am weary and faint in my mind, longing continually to be discharged.

To-day I found power to pray for myself; confessed it good for me to be in desertion, and asked God to give me (if it was not tempting him) a sign from his word. The answer was from Isaiah 54:7: "For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I gather thee. In a little wrath I hid my face from thee for a moment; but with everlasting kindness will I have mercy on thee, saith the Lord thy Redeemer."

At two I preached in the bowling-green, to (by computation) six thousand people. Before I began, and after, the enemy raged exceedingly. A troop of his children, soldiers and polite gentlemen, had taken possession of a corner of the green, and roared like their brethren the two Gergesenes, before the devils were sent into the civiler swine. They provoked the spirit of jealousy to lift up a standard

against them. I never felt such a power before, and promised the people that they should feel it too; for I saw God had a great work to do among us by Satan's opposition. I lifted up my voice like a trumpet, and in a few minute, drove him out of the field. For above an hour I preached the Gospel with extraordinary power, from blind Bartimeus, and am confident it could not fall to the ground.

213

Men., September 17th. This morning a woman received pardon through the word. The rain ceased as I began, and began again as I left off.

I expounded the prodigal son near the brick-yard. Many, I hope, saw themselves. They come to me daily, who have found Christ, or rather are found by him, so that I lose count of them.

This afternoon I conferred with Thomas Tucker and Eliz. Shirdock, both clearly justified. Matthew Davis, a notorious drunkard, &c., till last Saturday was se'nnight, came then to the green, and was justified in a moment. John Lewis was filled with joy last night. Prudence Nichols knows that her Redeemer liveth. Several who had lost their peace, are daily brought out of darkness; as was a woman this evening at Gloucester-lane. Another, while I was discoursing from John v.,

received forgiveness, and testified it before us all. I did expect great things; for I was utterly exhausted before I began. "When I am weak, then I am strong," - for others, not myself. After preaching, the messenger of Satan came. He seldom fails me after success; but God, I know, will avenge me of mine adversary.

Tues., September 18th. I gave the sacrament to a dying woman, who triumphed over death, disarmed of his sting. I preached to above two thousand over against the school-house, and pressed them to come to Christ weary and heavy-laden. I finished Rom. 8 at Weaver's-hall, which is always crowded within and without. Mr. Rutter attempted to raise a disturbance; but none regarded him. Mrs. Labu followed me to M. Grevil's, with a young gentlewoman, to whom the word had come with power. Upon Mr. Oakley's speaking to her the first serious word she had ever heard, she asked if the gentleman was not crazy. But now in the same hour God slew and revived her. She felt and made confession of her faith, being full of astonishment and love.

Wed., September 19th. I breakfasted at M. Labu's. The roaring lion had tried to tear her to pieces, setting before her her sin (harmlessness) in all its aggravations, and persuading her she was lost, were it only for her telling me her sins were forgiven. She raised the family, not daring

to be alone, and continued all night offering up prayers and supplications, with strong crying and tears, to Him that was able to

214

save. Toward morning she was heard in that she feared; fell into a slumber, and waked in perfect peace. I spent an hour with her. She

could do nothing but cry, and wonder, and rejoice.

At the Hall a poor man bore a noble testimony, that God had shed abroad his love in his heart last night, so that "I waked," said he, "this morning full of heaven." Another in the afternoon, formerly a Papist, declared himself set at liberty, after he had been hearing me expound.

Ann Bladworth likewise informs me, that she has clear and strong evidence of her acceptance, ever since Sunday night.

I preached at Baptist-Mills, on, "The Son of man hath power to forgive sins upon earth." I found Him with my mouth, and knew he would set to his seal: had great power in preaching, and greater in prayer. A woman sunk down with groaning that could not be uttered. I had not time to stay with her, but hastened to pray by Sally Murray, who lay a-dying and triumphing over death. I felt her spirit, and longed to be in her place.

Weak, spiritless, dead, among the men-bands, I wanted to get away without speaking or praying, because they were all as dead, it seemed,

as I. I was overruled to stay and pray, and had the spirit of prayer as never before. We were all in a flame; I prayed again and again, not knowing how to part.

Thur., September 20th. I was glad to be interrupted by Anne Clayton, who tells me, that on Tuesday night after expounding, she had had Jesus Christ evidently set forth before her eyes (of faith), as crucified. This lasted from ten to twelve. At the same time, she saw herself inconceivably vile, and was filled with love and confidence in her Saviour. In that evening it was, that a man declared he had been seeking righteousness fourteen years, as it were by the works of the law, but never attained to it; and was now in despair of ever attaining it, unless by faith. One of the brethren testified, "I feel the Spirit of Christ in me, continually springing up into everlasting life."

At the Hall I explained Rom. 9. Through mercy, we could none of us see aught of the "horrible decree" there; but only his justice in rejecting them who had first rejected Him. Christ the Saviour of all men was in the midst of us. Two of his witnesses set to their seal, having received

215

forgiveness yesterday at the Mills.

Fri., September 21st. I appointed any who had been reconciled through my ministry, to call upon me after expounding. Among others,

there came Daniel Morris, a gross sinner, till God awakened him by George Whitefield. On Saturday in the bowling-green, faith came by hearing. "I was filled with joy," said he, "above what tongue can express; went home leaping and rejoicing. I know my sins are forgiven. I hate them worse than death. I love every man, and particularly those who make a scoff at me."

Anne Cole declares, that, Monday was seven-night, at Mrs. England's, she was filled at once with inexpressible peace and comfort; "so that now I know I am forgiven; all my doubts and fears are vanished; and I could rejoice to die this moment."

John Quick was set at liberty from sin, after many years of Egyptian bondage.

Eliz. Parsons, while I was preaching at Baptist-Mills that forgiveness is a present grace, experienced it such. "You said we must have our sins forgiven here, or not at all; upon which, I thought I have not forgiveness now, but believe God can, and will, give it me. Immediately I was as sure God had pardoned me, as if he himself had spoken it to me; and have, ever since, been full of a comfort and peace which I never knew before."

Virtuous Whetman, long dead in sin, has now, she tells me, a full confidence that Christ died for her; and finds her whole dependence is

on Him.

J. T. in a flood of tears informed me, Christ showed himself her Saviour at that word, "The harlots and publicans go into the kingdom of heaven before you." Such was she till last night: but she is washed, but she is justified! and loves much, because much is forgiven her.

Richard Bourn, while I was speaking last Friday of the brazen serpent, looked up to the Antitype, and was healed. The devil raged exceedingly, and tore him with temptations; till Jesus about midnight got himself the victory, and filled his soul with love. All he desires now is, to be with Christ.

216

Fri., September 21st. We had much of God with us in our general intercession. From Gloucester-lane I went to M. Labu, and met with J.

Wildair's sermon. While we were reading the blind man's protestation against colours, that is, the natural man's against any sensible operations of the Holy Ghost, Miss Godly, a girl of fifteen, helped us to a most convincing answer. She burst into tears, fell back in her chair, and discovered the strongest emotions of soul; but such as might well proceed from the God of order. I thought it was the accuser of the brethren troubled her; inquired, but could get no answer. We were greatly assisted in prayer for her. She took no notice till about half an

hour after; when she waked as out of a pleasant dream, and asked,

"Where am I where have I been?" I returned her question, "Where have you been" and she answered with loving simplicity, "In heaven, I think." Her every word, and sigh, and tear, evidenced the truth of what

she told me, that it was grievous to her, after such communion with God, to find she must continue longer in the body.

Sat., September 22nd. M. Esther Brook called, and told me, she had been awakened (as others who now believe) by George Whitefield's ministry; convinced of sin by Mr. Bray's; set at liberty under mine.

That she believed, in general, while I repeated those words, "The promise is to all that are afar off;" and had them strongly applied, while hearing me at Baptist-Mills. In a moment she was assured that all her sins were forgiven; and filled with such joy, that she could

scarce live under it. It quite overpowered her body for two days. "But

now, methinks," said she, "all the Scripture was written for me." I asked, whether she was afraid to die. A visible joy in her face gave me

the answer, which her tongue confirmed. Was I in her state, I should desire nothing so much as death.

In the afternoon I spoke a word of caution to one who seems strong in the faith, and begins to be lifted up; the sure effect of her growing acquaintance with some of Calvin's followers.

In the bowling-green I showed the nature and life of faith from Gal. 2:20; and then justification by faith alone, at the Hall. Two Clergymen were present. I proved from Scripture and our own Church, that all were Papists, Pharisees, Antichrists, and accursed, who brought any other doctrine. Some of my hearers were forced to turn their backs.

217

Sun., September 23rd. I took coach for Hanham. A genteel Quaker was one of the company. Going and coming I laboured to convince her of sin; and spoke more closely than ever I did in my life; yet without convincing. Such power belongeth unto God.

I discoursed from 2 Cor. 5 to four thousand sinners; then gave the sacrament at Mr. Willis's. Among the communicants was Susanna Milsore, who has been oppressed by the devil. I prayed with a dying man, beyond Hanham. He was overjoyed to see me; had been awakened by field-preaching, but not yet found mercy. I left him patiently expecting it.

I missed hearing a railing sermon at St. James's. Notwithstanding all opposition, we ride on because of the word of truth. So I found it at the bowling-green, where I preached from Isai. 61: "The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me, because the Lord hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek," &c. Near six thousand heard me, quietly

at least. I spoke with uncommon power, especially to the unawakened. Romans 11 led me unawares to speak of final perseverance, whereby some, I would hope, were cut off from their vain-confidence.

Mon., September 24th. I was carried out at Weaver's-hall to speak of the blind guides, from Isai. 29:.. Several followed me home; particularly Charles Nichols and Betty Brown, who were fully satisfied, at the Hall on Thursday night, of their pardon. So was Joseph Mountstevens, at the bowling-green yesterday: confident, had he died before, he must have gone to hell; but that he should be saved, was he to die now.

Margaret Evans, in heaviness, next to despair, found the comfort at eleven on Friday. The word applied was, "O Lord, our God, other lords besides thee have had dominion over us; but by thee only will we make mention of thy name." The burden, she said, went off in a moment, and she has been full of joy ever since.

Sarah Rutter now informs me, that she first found power to believe while I was explaining Rom. 5. I prayed, in my way to the brickyard, with a poor dying drunkard, who was glad to say, "Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord." Whether I did not come too late, God only knows. I cried from Isai. 55, "Ho, every one that thirsteth, come

ye to the waters!" Between two and three thousand attended. I found great freedom in speaking to them, who are altogether such as I was. I

had a weary walk to Nicholas-street Society; and thence to Mrs.

England's, where I discoursed for two hours on John vii.

Here Susanna Milsore made open confession of the faith, which had come to her by hearing yesterday. Her soul is delivered out of the snare of the fowler. God hath avenged her of her adversary; and she now treads upon serpents and scorpions.

Tues., September 25th. I preached at Bradford to about two thousand. For an hour and a half I described their state by nature and grace, in the man that fell among thieves, &c. I did not spare them that were whole, and had no need of a physician. They bore it surprisingly. I received invitations to several neighbouring towns. May I never run before God's call, or stay one moment after it!

I dined at a carnal Quaker's, who pleaded for a moderate pursuit of riches, &c. I was grieved to find no more of the spirit of religion among those who ought to have the most of it. But the desire of other things disproves their pretensions to the Spirit. "He that drinketh of this water shall thirst no more."

We baited at a good Dissenter's, near Bath, who seems to have the root of the matter in him. It was near eight before I reached the Hall.

The chapter in course was Rom. 12; but I could not press particular duties, till they had the foundation; and therefore exhorted them to get forgiveness before they could perform the least part of the law.

The brethren I besought to present their bodies a living sacrifice; and pointed out the particular acts of this devotion.

Wed., September 26th. I received much light and strength to expound Isai. 30. A woman sank down in deep distress. Several who wait for faith were affected greatly. From one to three, more came than I was able to talk with; all seeking what many have found. In particular, Anne Spartin was filled with joy in believing, while we were at prayers last Monday. So was Mrs. Williams, in going home from church.

Susanna Trapman likewise sees her interest in the blood of Jesus.

Elizabeth Parsons, whom the evil spirit has often torn, is sensible now, that he is cast out. It is observable of the two last, that they have never

219

been baptized. I now require no farther proof that one may be an inward Christian without baptism. They are both desirous of it; and

who can forbid water

Abraham Staples informs me, that on Saturday was three weeks, while

I was preaching, "Lazarus, come forth," he was called out of his natural state, and raised to the life of faith. "I felt," said he, "that my sins were

forgiven, by A peace and warmth within me, which have continued

ever since." "Then you know," said I, "that the Spirit of God is a Spirit of burning" "Yes," he answered, "and a Spirit of shaking too; for he turns me upside down. I am full of joy and life, and could be always a-preying; should be glad to die this moment. What knowledge I have, I

have given me of God; for I am no scholar; I can neither write nor read."

Sarah Pearce declares, she received the first comfort in hearing Rom. 5 explained. She was then justified; but did not draw nigh in full assurance of faith, till last night. Every word I spoke came with power. She had the witness of her own spirit or conscience, that all the marks I mentioned were in her; and the Spirit of God came in with his testimony, and put it beyond the possibility of a doubt. Some of her words were, "I was once extremely bigoted against my brethren the Dissenters; but am now enlarged toward them, and all mankind, in an inexpressible manner. I do not depend upon a start of comfort; but find it increase ever since it began. I perceive a great change in myself; and expect a greater. I feel a divine attraction in my soul. I was once so afraid of death, that I durst not sleep; but now I do not fear it at all. I desire nothing upon earth. I dread nothing but sin. God suffers me to be strongly tempted; but I know, when he gives faith, he will try it."

See here the true assurance of faith! How consistent an humble, not doubting, a filial, not servile, fear of offending! I desire not such an assurance as blots out those scriptures, "Be not high-minded, but fear;" "Work out your salvation with fear and trembling," &c. God keep me in continual fear, lest, by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a cast-away.

At the Mills I preached upon, "As Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so," &c. I spoke plainly to the women-bands of their 220 unadvisableness, want of love, and bearing one another's burdens. We found an immediate effect in the enlargement of our hearts. Some were convinced that they had thought too highly of themselves; and that their first love, like their first joy, was only a foretaste of that temper which continually rules in a new heart.

Thur., September 27th. Returning from early prayers, I met Sarah Puttam, the person that had been so wounded yesterday at the Hall. She informed me, that Christ did then break off her yoke, and she felt herself at liberty from sin and sorrow. Soon after news was brought me, that the man I had prayed by beyond Hanham, was now in the full triumph of faith. On Sunday he desired longer life; but now he only longs, with an holy impatience, to depart and be with the Lord, which is far better.

I gave offence at the Hall, by pressing the doctrine of non-resistance, from Rom. 12. What will they say to me to-morrow, when I come to the 13th?

Fri., September 28th. Christianity flourishes under the cross. None who follow after Christ want that badge of discipleship. Wives and children are beaten, and turned out of doors; and the persecutors are the complainers. It is always the lamb that troubles the water. Every Sunday damnation is denounced against all that hear us Papists, us Jesuits, us seducers, us bringers in of the Pretender. The Clergy murmur aloud at the number of communicants, and threaten to repel them; yet will not the world bear that we should talk of persecution. No; for the world is Christian now, and the offence of the cross ceased. Alas! What would they farther Some lose their bread, some their habitations; one suffers stripes, another confinement; and yet we must not call this persecution. Doubtless they will find some other name for it, when they do God service by killing us.

To-day Ms. Hanney was with me. While she continued a drunkard, a swearer, and company-keeper, it was very well; she and her father agreed entirely. But from the time of her turning to God, he has used her most inhumanly. Yesterday he beat her, and drove her out of

doors, following her with imprecations and threatenings to murder her, if ever she returned. When she was cast out, Jesus found her, and

221

said unto her by his Spirit, "Be of good cheer, thy sins are forgiven thee." She continued all the night in joy unspeakable, and can now

with confidence call God her Father.

I preached at the Fish-ponds, on, "To as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God."

Sat., September 29th. I breakfasted with six or eight awakened

sinners, who are hourly waiting for the consolation of Israel. I prayed

by a dying woman, and cut off her confidence in the flesh. As sure as I

ask the question, "Why do you hope to be saved?" I receive that woeful answer, "Because I have done no harm," or, "Because I have used my endeavours." This comes of our telling the people, "God, upon your

sincere endeavours, will accept you." There were several present,

whom I stripped of their filthy rags, and sent naked to Christ.

At noon Jane Clancy gave me an account of her faith. It came as I was

asking at Baptist-mills, "If Christ was now present, and said to you,

'Believest thou that I am able to do this, to forgive sins upon earth?'

would you say, 'Lord, I believe, help thou my unbelief?'" The word was

applied in that moment. "I went home," said she, "justified; in such peace, and joy, and love, as cannot be described; and I am still sure

that the Son of God loved me, and gave himself for me."

At the bowling-green I explained the first words that presented: "Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen." Afterwards I enforced obedience to the powers that be, from Rom. 13; and showed the scandalous inconsistency of your high-Churchmen, who disclaim resistance, and yet practise it; continually speaking evil of dignities, nay, of the ruler of the people, as well as of those who are put in authority under him. Fewer than I expected were offended at me.

Sun., September 30th. I found my usual congregation at Hanham; and showed them their Saviour, from Isai. 53. Many tears of love or desire were shed. At the Hall I expounded "the woman taken in adultery."

Some, convicted by their own conscience, went out.

Mon., October 1st. I expounded Isai. 35. with great freedom and power. In the hours of conference, the following persons declared to

222

me their faith in Him who justifies the ungodly:-

Mary Brown, took with strong trembling last night at the Hall, was there set at liberty, both from fear and guilt. "I love all mankind," she said, (the best proof of faith,) "and could die for my worst enemy."

Sarah Gough found the power of God present to heal her, while I

repeated, last Sunday night, "He hath sent me to bind up the broken-hearted."

Sarah Norton was strongly tempted not to tell me, that, on Wednesday in the Hall, she received forgiveness. I was bidding them "wait for the promise of the Father." She replied within herself, "Well, I will wait;" and was immediately struck to the heart, and filled with joy unspeakable. This was greatly increased at the sacrament.

The same good work was wrought in W. Spenser, on Saturday night, after hearing the word. He is now sure that his sins are blotted out; for the times of refreshment are come.

Eleanor Kitchinor, weak in faith before, received the full assurance last night.

Judith Williams (of whose being justified I heard last week) sends me word that her faith increases daily. Returning from the Hall in deep distress, God had opened her eye of faith to discern her Saviour.

Many find power to believe, either in or soon after hearing. So it was with Joseph Black. On Friday night in bed, he was suddenly taken ill; lost all strength; lay speechless. Soon after he found the power of God overshadow him, and a warmth and life spreading through soul and body. He revived in both, and was endued with power to apply Christ

to himself in particular. Satan strove hard to hinder Francis Hud from coming to inform me, that he had been my constant hearer, and had always applied what I said of sinners to himself. "I saw," said he, "that I was in a damnable state, till I had forgiveness of sins, but was sure I should have it. The devil was very busy with me, especially in prayer. I told him, 'Satan, I am thy slave now; but thou canst not hold me long. Christ will soon come and deliver me.' He did come in my sleep. I was sure it was Christ himself. I waked in great triumph, knowing the devil's power was at an end. Since then I have been happy indeed."

223

In the afternoon I went out into the lanes and streets of the city, to call men in to the "great supper." (Luke 14). The power of the Lord accompanied me. So again at Gloucester-lane, while I discoursed on "the man born blind." (John 9). Three Pharisees lay concealed at an house adjoining; and they could not have come at a more convenient season. God was with my mouth. They could not stand it, but made their escape in the middle of my discourse. The sincere were strengthened and comforted, as several testified at that time.

Tues., October 2nd. I dined at George the collier's, an happy soul; as full of joy and love as he can contain. I hope one day to be like him. I exhorted the colliers, by the example of the Syro-Phenician woman, to

pray always, till their requests are granted.

Wed., October 3rd. Sarah Townsend informed me, that, on Sunday evening, while we were singing, "Come to judgment, come away," she found and felt in herself that she durst come; the Spirit in that instant sealing her pardon upon her heart. She was filled all night with joy unspeakable.

Another testified that, at Kingswood yesterday, she caught hold of that word, "Be of good cheer, thy sins are forgiven thee;" and knows she has apprehended Him, of whom she was first apprehended.

Sarah Stevens, aged seventy-three, confesses that a fortnight ago, she was first convinced of sin by my ministry, having been till then, as she and the world thought, a very good Christian. I have hardly known a soul under stronger convictions. Her expressions are full of self-
abhorrence. She truly renounces her own, and hungers and thirsts after Christ's, righteousness. We prayed, and she received great comfort; whether THE comfort, God will soon discover.

I look upon this instance as a peculiar blessing to me; for I had scarce any faith for old people; they are so strong in self-righteousness, so intrenched in their own works, so hardened by the abuse of means.

Surely the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through

God, if they can pull down such strong-holds.

I preached again from "the woman of Canaan" with double power. I prayed by a dying man; found him leaning on the broken reed of his

224

own endeavours. I showed him that they could not bear his weight, but he must fall with violence into hell, unless he found a better

support. I left him desirous to stay his soul on the Rock of Ages.

Fri., October 5th. I had been often hindered from seeing Mrs. Granil, the woman that cried out so vehemently in the bowling-green, He that letteth to-day was taken out of the way, and she came to me. She has had no rest for these three weeks; can neither eat nor drink as usual; believes Christ is able to deliver her. We betook ourselves to prayer; and she screamed out as before. I broke off, and let her pray; for I never heard any pray like her. We laid open the promises, sang, and prayed for her till the Comforter came. She now knows that her Redeemer liveth. She came afterwards to return me thanks for her deliverance through my ministry. Lord, not unto me!

The quickening Spirit was with us at Gloucester-lane, while I was discoursing on Lazarus raised. Two women experienced Christ to be the resurrection and the life. There was a great shaking among the dry bones, and they that had life before, now had it more abundantly.

Sat., October 6th. Averel Spenser, one that received faith last night, came to-day, and declared it. While she was seeking Christ, she had several assurances in prayer, that she should shortly find him. Last night she was pierced through with the sword of the Spirit, and ascertained Of her pardon, beyond the possibility of a doubt. Peace, joy, and love flowed in upon her soul. She is of that simple, unopposing temper, which yields the freest passage to the grace of God.

My subject at the bowling-green was, "Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake." Great need there is to prepare them for the gathering storm. Already it is come to that, that except a man forsake all that he hath, (life only excepted,) he cannot be Christ's disciple.

Sun., October 7th. I declared the covenant of grace at Hanham. I never fail of finding power among the colliers. I received the sacrament at St. Philip's. I first earnestly asked that God would not send me empty away. I returned to my pew, and was immediately overpowered, in a manner inexpressible, not with the very thing, but with the strongest assurance that I should receive all I wait for. God mollified my

225

hardness, and I abhorred myself before him, as in dust and ashes. I asked, with all submission, some token from his word. I hardly

remember to have read the passage: it came with power, and abased me to nothing: "Thou art my battle-axe, and weapons of war; for in thee will I break in pieces the nations; and with thee," &c.

I described the new creature at the bowling-green. Many, as they told me afterwards, were then stripped of Shelf vain religion. I received still greater strength at night to expound Isai. 43. Our souls did magnify the Lord, and our spirits rejoiced in God our Saviour.

Mon., October 8th. We found him applying his own promises, which we really believe belong to us, though delivered to the Jews some thousand years ago.

Sarah Stevens now finds they were made to her. She tells me, the moment she rose from prayer last Wednesday, She felt her weight lessened, and, before she got to the door, entirely removed. At seventy-three she is indeed converted, and become a little child; full as she can be of peace, and love, and joy. She feels the Spirit of God within her; embraces Christ with the arms of faith; and cries out with old Simeon, "Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace; for mine eyes have seen thy salvation."

Edward Hud testifies his faith in Christ, which came by hearing last week.

Mary Taylor witnesses the same good confession; and Mary Haman.

The latter was justified in private prayer. I called on the dying man, with whom I prayed last night. I found him a new creature. He told me, he now tasted the peace I spoke of, the joy and comfort of a living

faith. I asked whether he was still afraid to die. "No, no," he replied; "I desire to die; I want to get away." "Why, do you love Jesus Christ" "Yes, dearly," said he with his voice and looks. I left him ready for the

Bridegroom, and published the word of reconciliation at the brick-yard. God in Christ was with us of a truth. I never spoke more clearly.

The same power was in the Society. Mr. Williams, of Kidderminster, was much edified among us. He followed a letter he wrote, inviting me thither. Of what denomination he is, I know not; nor is it material: for he has the mind which was in Jesus. I met my brother, just returned

226

from London.

Tues., October 9th. I received a letter from Holt, deterring me from coming again to Bearfield,; upon which invitation I set out with my brother this morning. We called at Mr. Cottie's, and heard the people were much exasperated against me, it being everywhere reported that I am (what is hard to credit) a strong Predestinarian. Much pains had been taken to represent me as such. We judged this a call for me to

declare myself, if the weavers, who were to rise, would suffer me.

We found about two thousand waiting. I let my brother pray, and then began abruptly, "If God be for us, who can be against us? He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?" God opened my mouth so as seldom before. I felt what I spoke, while offering Christ to all: in much love I besought the Dissenters not to lose their charity for me because I was of opinion God would have all men to be saved. For an hour and a half, I strongly called all sinners to the Saviour of the world. My strength do I ascribe unto him. No one opened his mouth against me. The devil fled before us; and I believe he will no more slander me with being a Predestinarian.

A Dissenting Minister, who before came to us, came to where we dined, and asked me, with much passion, how I durst have the impudence to speak against the Dissenters. I felt no emotion but pity and love. My brother was like-minded. We took no notice of his hard speeches, but tried to pacify, and left him somewhat calmer. O that God would always give us that meekness which his cause deserves!

Thur., October 11th. I expounded the prodigal son among our colliers.

Many a one, if not most of them, is ready to say, "I will arise, and go to my Father." At six I began John 1, at the widow Jones's. It was the first time of

my preaching by night in the open air. The yard contained about four hundred. The house was likewise full. Great power was in the midst. Satan blasphemed without, but durst not venture his children too near the Gospel, when I offered Christ Jesus to them. The enemy hurried them away; and all we could do was to pray for them.

Sat., October 13th. I waited with my brother upon a Minister, about baptizing some of his parish. He complained heavily of the multitude

227

of our communicants, and produced the canon against strangers. He could not admit that as a reason for their coming to his church, that

they had no sacrament at their own. I offered my assistance to lessen

his trouble; but he declined it. "There were a hundred of new

communicants," he told us," last Sunday; and I am credibly informed, some of them came out of spite to me."

We bless God for this cause of offence, and pray it may never be removed.

Sun., October 14th. I took horse for Bradford, the Minister having offered me his pulpit. But yesterday his heart failed; he feared his church would be pulled down; he feared the Bishop would be displeased. I went to church, and thence to the Common, where I preached forgiveness of sins to many serious hearers. In the evening I

returned to Bristol.

Mon., October 15th. My brother being gone to Wales, I expounded at eleven, and was, with others, quite melted down; especially in prayer.

At the brick-yard I discoursed on Matt. 11:5: "The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk," &c. In the midst of my discourse, Satan lift up his voice in his own children; which increased my boldness. I told the people, Christ had a work to do, and they should find it so. The sons of Belial soon quitted the field; but the power of the Lord continued with us. One man received a large increase of faith, and confessed it before many witnesses.

I prayed by a poor old woman, departing in the Lord. At the Society I met Mrs. Thomas, who testified her having received forgiveness while I spake to the rioters.

I dined at Rider's, a collier. Eliz. Hawkins here told me, that she received the blessing under the word, some weeks since; but quickly lost it. While we were praying, our brother Rider found an unknown warmth and comfort. I told him, if it was the work of God begun, God Would shine upon it, and clearly convince him of righteousness.

In the school-house I preached the promise of the Comforter. A woman fell to the ground with strong crying and tears. Eliz. Hawkins received her faith, and rejoiced in the light of God's countenance.

In explaining Isai. 1., I laid open the self-deceit of some, who rested short of the promises, because they had a liking to the word, or me.

Many were alarmed, and stirred up to a restless pursuit of Christ.

Wed., October 17th. Eliz. Field was with me, declaring she first found power to believe and love on Monday night, while I spoke from John 13, of our Lord's humility. "I was immediately lightened," she said; "assured my sins were forgiven; and so full of joy, that I was ready to faint under it."

Mary Branker bore a like testimony, that she was then filled with unknown power and comfort.

Thur., October 18th. I would have visited the poor dying woman to-day, but the Churchwarden, Mr. Every, had been with her, and with threatenings declared, if ever I came near her again, he would turn her out into the street, sick or well.

I received notice from Mrs. Stonehouse, that her husband was ill of the small-pox, and could not look after my affair with Goter; that I must come, or send the writ, or be non-suited. I thought it too late, as the writ must be returned Oct. 20th; and rested quite content.

Fri., October 19th. Mrs. Chad informs me, she received remission of sins some time ago, in Isai. 42; and has had continual joy ever since.

Many were comforted at the Hall, by Isai. 53.

Abigail Savage says, she found the comfort yesterday. She had been long in darkness, and could not lay hold on Christ; but is now fully persuaded of her redemption, and could not believe otherwise, if she would.

I read part of Mr. Law on Regeneration to our Society. How promising the beginning! how lame the conclusion! I perceived the man!

Christianity, he rightly tells us, is a recovery of the divine image; and a Christian is a fallen spirit restored, and re-instated in paradise; a living mirror of Father, Son, and Holy Ghost. After this, he supposes it possible for him to be insensible of such a change; to be happy and holy, translated into Eden, renewed in the likeness of God, one with Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, and yet not know it. Nay, we are not to expect, or hid others expect, any such consciousness, if we listen to

229

one who too plainly demonstrates, by this wretched inconsistency, that his knowledge of the new birth is mostly in theory.

At Mr. Labu's I met Miss Jeffreys, the Quaker, whom I had so laboured to convince of sin. I did not perceive any impression my words made at the time; but now, it seems, they sunk deep. An horrible dread has overwhelmed her. Her flesh trembles for fear of God; and she is afraid

of His judgments. She sees herself far worse than I described her; and thought, at my last expounding, she was every moment sinking into hell.

Sat., October 20th. I preached at Bradford in the Town-hall, with little power or effect. Sun., October 21st. At the Common, in the morning, I described the new creature to above fifteen hundred; and in the afternoon, to thrice that number, I preached the word of reconciliation. They all followed me with their prayers. I trust my labour among them hath not been in vain.

Thur., October 25th. I called on one, who did run well, but is turned out of the way by an unbelieving parent. "Woe unto the world because of offences !" Woe unto the man by whom the offence comes! It were better that a millstone were tied about his neck, and he east into the depth of the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones who believe in Jesus.

Fri., October 26th. I baptized Mr. Wigginton in the river by Baptist-Mills; and went on my way rejoicing to French-Hay.

The rain did not lessen our usual congregation at the fish-ponds; to whom I spoke from Rev. 2:10: "Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer. Behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison," &c.

Sat., October 27th. I preached at the green, on the strong man armed; and disturbed him in his palace.

I pressed the use of means, as means, from Isai. 58, which is full of promises to those that walk in the ordinances with a sincere heart. I took occasion to show the degeneracy of our modern Pharisees. Their predecessors fasted twice a week; but these maintain their character for holiness at a cheaper rate. In reverence to the Church, some keep their public day on Friday. None of them regard it, though enjoined, as
230

a fast. As to prayer and sacrament, their neglect is equally notorious. And yet these men cry out, "The Church, the Church!" when they will not hear the Church themselves; but despise her authority, trample upon her orders, teach contrary to her Articles and Homilies, and break her Canons, every man of them, who of late pretend to press their observance.

Sun., October 28th. From Isaiah 57:15, "For thus saith the high and lofty One," &c., I spoke closely to the unawakened, and comfortably to the mourners.

In the hard rain I preached at the bowling-green, from, "Drop down, ye heavens, from above, and let the skies pour down righteousness."

Mon., October 29th. I expounded, with extraordinary assistance,

Isaiah 59, that dreadful description of national sin and punishment.

While I was speaking, war with Spain was proclaimed, which made us take the more notice of those words: "According to their deeds, accordingly he will repay; fury to his adversaries, recompence to his enemies; to the islands he will repay recompence. So shall they fear the name of the Lord from the west, and his glory from the rising of the sun: when the enemy shall come in like a flood, the Spirit of the Lord shall lift up a standard against him."

Tues., October 30th. My brother preached his farewell sermon to the sorrowful colliers. I wrote as follows to the Bishop of Bristol:

"MY Lord, - Several persons, both Quakers and Baptists, have applied to me for baptism. Their names are, W. Crease, Mary Crease, Mary Gregory, Rebecca Dickenson, Anne Spanin, Eliz. Mills, Eliz. Parsons. It has pleased God to make me instrumental in their conviction. This has given them such a prejudice for me, that they desire to be received into the Church by my ministry. They choose likewise to be baptized by immersion; and have engaged me to give your Lordship notice, as the Church requires."

Today I talked with several who have lately found rest to their souls; particularly Joanna Nichols, justified on Sunday, in hearing the word.

It was then she first said, "I have redemption in his blood." Jane Connor, at Baptist-Mills, found the power of the Lord present to heal

231

her. Jane Parker experienced the same, while we were singing. Mary Connor on Thursday night recovered that unspeakable peace which she first received some weeks ago, but lost, by keeping it to herself.

John Hooper, at Baptist-hills, saw with the eye of faith our Lord as interceding for him with his Father. The word by which faith came was, "Behold, I have graven thee on the palms of my hands."

While my brother was praying among the bands, one attempted to run out. We stopped and found her in an angry despair, refusing to ask for mercy: we continued instant in prayer for her: God was with us of a truth. Several cried out under strong convictions; others were tilled with peace and joy in believing.

A few stayed behind the rest, to comfort our despairing sister. God had hid his face from her, and she went on frowardly in the way of her own heart. Inordinate affection is the strong man's armour; and any unmortified desire, which a man allows himself in, will effectually drive and keep Christ out of the heart.

Thur., November 1st. I met Miss Burdock at Mr. Wigginton's, full of good desires, but kept down by the fear of man. I told her plainly she

would never find peace, till she was deeply convinced of her having denied her Master.

She now no longer justified herself, but confessed she had loved father and mother more than Christ. I saw her in the toils, earnest for deliverance, but almost despairing. God enlarged my heart in prayer for her. She went away sorrowful, yet not without hope.

Fri., November 2nd. Our thanksgiving notes multiply greatly.

I received a summons from Oxford, to respond in divinity disputations; which, with other concurrent providences, is a plain call to that place.

Sat., November 3rd. I spent an hour with many of the Society, in attempts to thank God for all, and especially his late, mercies. I administered the sacrament at M. Williams's: began preaching with much reluctance on, "Fight the good fight of faith." The Lord was with my mouth, when he had opened it. I trust many found he was.

232

Sun., November 4th. I preached in Kingswood on Isaiah 42:1: "Behold my servant, whom I uphold," &c. We found that Spirit was put upon

Him for us. Seldom have I perceived a greater power amongst us.

I gave the sacrament to one whom I had left waiting for Christ. She was now full of His Spirit, ready for the Bridegroom. No cloud

interposed between her Beloved and her; only the thin veil of flesh and blood, which was well-nigh rent asunder. What would I give to be on that death-bed!

I met Miss Burdock once more with her sister, and spent two hours in awakening and exhorting them. I doubt not but they will yet break through the host of the Philistines, and draw water out of the well of Bethlehem. I expounded the parable of the sower; and in the evening our Lord's divine prayer, John 17. Many, I trust, found him then interceding for them.

Mon., November 5th. I met some of the bands at our sister Linford's. In prayer one received forgiveness. We had a greater blessing at the Hall than ever before. I summed up all I had said, either to publicans or Pharisees, to the comfort or discomfort of every one present.

I spent the time of conference with the candidates for baptism. All seem prepared for that holy ordinance.

In the Brick-yard I discoursed on the woman with the issue of blood. God magnified his strength in my weakness. Several cried out they were healed! Virtue was gone out of Him. They heard his voice, "Thy faith hath made thee whole: go in peace."

Many had fellowship with Christ in his sufferings, while I spoke of

them in the words of St. John. He melted us into tears of love. I knew not how to leave them, so many testified that they then tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come.

Tues., November 6th. I was called to a woman at Bedminster. I have seldom seen a soul more deeply plunged in the spirit of bondage, or under stronger pangs of the new birth. She received immediate relief in prayer; and came at noon to tell me that her yoke was wholly broken off.

233

(There is no document for Nov 7 1739 – Apr 30 1740)

May 1 - August 6, 1740

Thur., May 1st. I met S. Soan's band, full of love, and longing for the Lord's appearing. I conferred with more, who were lately justified. I visited a sick man, just sent forth out of the pit by the blood of the covenant.

Fri., May 2nd. I prayed at Islington with Anne Gates, believing we had the petitions we asked. I then baptised a child and her. We all felt the descent of the Holy Ghost. Before, she was in the spirit of heaviness and bondage. The moment the water touched her, she declares she felt her load removed, and sensibly received forgiveness. Sorrow and

sighing fled away. The Spirit bore witness with the water, and she longed to be with Christ. We gave glory to God, who so magnified his ordinance.

I began observing the weekly church-fast with a few at the Foundery. I rebuked one of the hands, who was fallen asleep. Instead of spending the Sunday in carnal ordinances, she passed it partly in idleness, partly in her common business. For what signified her endeavours to keep the commandments before she had faith.

I preached the Gospel at Wapping to the poor. Their groans and tears testified their inward affliction.

I received the following simple letter. Let our brethren of Fetterlane answer it.

"My Rev. Father in Christ, - My heart being now open before God, I write as in his presence.

"The first gift of faith I received after I had seen myself a lost sinner, bound with a thousand chains, and dropping into hell. Then I heard

his voice, 'Be of good cheer, thy sins are forgiven thee;' and could say,

'The Son of God loved me, and gave himself for me.' I thought I saw him at the right hand of his Father, making intercession for me. I went on in great joy for four months. Then pride crept in, and I thought the work was finished, when it was but just begun. There I rested, and in a

little time fell into doubts and fears, whether my sins were really

234

forgiven me, till I plunged myself into the depth of misery. I could not pray; neither had I any desire to do it, or to read, or hear the word. My

soul was like the troubled sea. Then did I see my own evil heart, my cursed, devilish nature, and feel my helplessness, that I could not so much as think a good thought. My love was turned into hatred, passion, envy; and I felt a thousand hells my due, 'and cried out in bitter anguish of spirit, 'Save, Lord, or I perish.'

"In my last extremity, I saw my Saviour full of grace and truth for me; and heard his voice again whispering, 'peace, be still.' My peace returned, and greater sweetness of love than I ever knew before.

"Now my joy is calm and solid; my heart drawn out to the Lord continually. I know that my Redeemer liveth for me. He is my strength and my rock, and will carry on his work in my soul, to the day of redemption.

"Dear Sir, I have spoke the state of my heart, as before the Lord. I beg your prayers, that I may go on from strength to strength, from conquering to conquer, till death is swallowed up in victory.

"GRACE MURRAY"

Sat., May 3rd. My spirit revived at the sight of the scoffers in the

Foundery. I was directed to Heb. 12:18: "For ye are not come to the mount that might be touched, and that burned with fire, nor unto blackness," &c. God put strong words in my mouth, and in battles of shaking did he fight with them. The effect was both seen and heard: therefore would our still brethren say it had no effect at all.

Sun., May 4th. I dwelt on that word, "Thou art a God that hidest thyself, O God of Israel the Saviour;" and spoke, with much liberty and power, of the wilderness-state, and the means of grace.

After sermon I was accosted by Howel Harris, whom God sent to my assistance. He had first called on James Hutton, who directed him to go hear Viney preach. But he blundered to the Foundery. "His conscience in the Holy Ghost," he said, "bore witness to the truth I spoke, and he found his heart immediately knit to me." We took sweet counsel together, and went to the altar of God as friends.

235

In the evening I opened the book on, "And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand." He who sent was with me, in his promised power. The fire was kindled in many hearts. Ascribe unto the Lord the honour due unto his name.

I carried Howel to the bands. He spoke in simplicity concerning Satan's devices, and repeated the very words which the tempter has

so often spoke to us by the mouth of our still brethren. All his arguments touching "false joy, animal spirits, presumption," &c., had been tried upon our brother, to make him let go his shield.

Mon., May 5th. I carried him to S. Anderson's, to whom he spoke in words which man's wisdom doth not teach. The Spirit of love and supplication was poured out. There was as in us all one soul.

We met the bands at five. I bear them witness that their love abounds yet more and more in knowledge and in all judgement.

I preached from John 3. The Word made great havoc. They cried out on all sides, and fell down under it. I spoke afterwards to two or three of them. In the same hour God had made them sore, and bound them up; he had wounded, and his hands made them whole.

Tues., May 6th. In the hours of conference Eliz. Holmes informed me, she had been filled with the Spirit of love while we were praying at S. Anderson's. Cordelia Critchet, a Papist till convinced by us, appeared not far from the kingdom of heaven. I want time to take a particular account of them who are daily convinced of sin or of righteousness. Our brethren, I bless God, are mistaken in saying He no longer works by our hands.

I heard Howel Harris expound at Crouch's. He is indeed a son of thunder and of consolation.

God put it into our hearts to pray for the poor malefactors, passing to execution: and his Spirit made intercession. I am sure (how much more the rest of us!) that our prayer was heard, and answered, upon some of our dying brethren.

At eleven Cordelia Critchet came to let me know she received the atonement yesterday, while we were at prayers. The work, as far as I

236

can yet discern, is real.

Another, who, after justification, had fallen into gross sin, informs me, God has again received him to his mercy in Christ Jesus. His deep humility and abundant love are good evidences for him.

Lucy Spring, who, on Monday night, fell into the pangs of the new birth, came to-day, full of peace and comfort.

Howel Harris, whom I carried to the still bands, delivered a full and noble testimony, that "he had been drawn to the sacrament while dead in sin, and received forgiveness there; afterwards the love of God was shed abroad in his heart by the Holy Ghost, then given him. From thence commenced the fight of faith. Fears, doubts, darkness returned; and he was brought through fire and water into a wealthy place."

His words were contradictory to all our still brethren have been teaching this half year. They were scandalised and confounded; the weak comforted. Much caviling followed. Howel, be sure, had no faith. Bray attempted to explain away what he said; Bell and Oxley to confute it: the latter compared him to Cain, when God lightened his burden, upon his complaining it was too heavy for him to bear. All agreed that he had not seen his heart; and because he had some strivings, had no faith. I invited them to hear more of him on Thursday evening.

Thur., May 8th. He declared his experience before our Society. O what a flame was kindled I Never man spake, in my hearing, as this man slake. What a nursing-father has God sent us He has indeed learned of the good Shepherd to carry the lambs in his bosom. Such love, such power, such simplicity was irresistible. The lambs dropped down on all sides into their shepherd's arms. Those words broke out like thunder, "I now find a commission from God to invite all poor sinners, justified or unjustified, to his altar; and I would not for ten thousand worlds be the man that should keep any from it. There I first found Him myself. That is the place of meeting." He went on in the power of the Most Highest. God called forth his witnesses. Several declared they

had found Christ in the ordinances.

237

Poor Simpson stood by, hardening his heart. I suppose now he will call Howel, as he does my brother, "a subtle deceiver of the people." Scarce any from Fetter-lane were present: too good care had been taken to prevent them.

Fri., May 9th. I went to Idington, intending to baptise Bridget Armstead. Satan hindered, by his Churchwardens. But can any one forbid water? Not unless they can dry up the Thames.

In conference Mrs. Dupee informed me, she had received forgiveness last week while I was preaching it. Is His hand shortened at all, that he cannot save? Or, because we are weak, hath He no power to deliver?

I met about one hundred of the Society to keep the fast. Christ owned His ordinance, and melted us into prayer, through his Spirit healing our infirmities.

I went to give the sacrament to a dying woman. I found her an old, subtle Pharisee. I could have no access in speaking, and betook myself to prayer. The sin-convincing Spirit came mightily upon her, so that she roared for the very disquietness of her heart. The strong man who had peaceably kept his palace for above seventy years, was now disturbed, tormented, bound, cast out. She broke forth into strong

cryings, and, soon after, into blessings and thanksgivings. As far as I can discern, she is quite delivered. We showed forth our Lord's death, and he was with us of a truth.

Sat., May 10th. I spoke closely to those who trusted to their faith of adherence, and insisted on that lowest mark of Christianity, forgiveness of sins.

My back was scarcely turned, when Oxley took his opportunity to draw away Howel Harris to deaf Bell's. I came time enough to break off their conference with my unwary friend. He now, without distrusting God, resolves to go nowhere without me. Two are better than one. Their word doth eat as a canker; especially Oxley's, whom we have cherished in our bosom. God help me to love him! I abhor both his principles and practices.

At Bowers's Society I found Bell, Bray, Hutton, Oxley, Holland, Ridley, and others of the same class. I withstood them to the face, and

238

appealed to the God that answereth by fire, for the truth of my doctrine, that the ordinances bind all, both justified and unjustified. A

woman testified, that the last time I expounded here, and bade them who had been confounded ask Jesus Christ alone whether they had faith, she did ask in our prayer, and immediately the love of God

overflowed her heart.

I preached at the Foundery on 1 John 2:12: "I write unto you, little children," &c. Hence I showed the three particulars which difference a child from a young man. The young man is strong; the child weak: the young man hath overcome the wicked one; the child is overcoming him: in the young man the word of God abideth; that is, he hath the constant witness of the Spirit.

In the Society Howel spoke excellently of good works, searching the Scripture, and loving one another.

Sun., May 11th. I met the women Leaders for the first time; and, after a lively prayer, led them to the Lord's table at St. Paul's.

I went forth to Kennington-Common. The hand of the Lord was upon me, and I prophesied, "O ye dry bones, hear the word of the Lord."

Truly there were very many in the open valley, and lo, they were very dry. But as I prophesied there was a noise, and, behold, a shaking, which we both saw and heard. Into some, I am confident, the breath came, and they lived.

Mon., May 12th. I employed three hours most profitably in conferring with the poor people; more of whom daily receive forgiveness, or the witness of the Spirit. Three or four were now set at liberty, in immediate answer to prayer.

I was with Miss Branford; who has been in darkness ever since her eyes were first opened (two years ago, at St. Helen's) to see her sins forgiven. In prayer, the love of God was now shed abroad in her heart, and she was translated into his marvellous light.

An aged gentlewoman here testified that she had long denied that article of her creed, "forgiveness of sins," but was yesterday experimentally convinced of it, under Mr. Hall's ministry. Others I meet with, who have passed from death unto life, in hearing our

239

brother Whitefield. Our brethren of Fetter-lane deny the fact, that any soul has been justified by our ministry, since "no one gives what he has not himself."

Tues., May 13th. Sarah Redford, justified under the word last Sunday, Mary Barraby and Anne Broad, a few days ago, and others, were with me to-day, testifying the work of God in their souls.

Mrs. Ricard told me at S. Witham's, that in the depth of despair Christ had given her rest; but Satan came in with the still brethren, and gained such advantage over her, that she even denied the faith, and its Author. Our Lord again confirmed his love to her, through a worm, the very scorn of men, and outcast of the still ones.

I met the men Leaders at Bray's, and was surprised to find above

twenty of the still brethren there; and more, to hear they constantly meet on Thursday and Sunday, while I am preaching at the Foundery.

The reason is obvious.

I bore my testimony for the ordinances and weak faith. Asked whether they did not hold,

1. That the means of grace are neither commands nor means:
2. That forgiveness is never given but together with the abiding witness of the Spirit. James Hutton would not have them give me any answer. I said, if they durst not avow their principles, I should take their silence for confession, and warn God's people against them.

Wed., May 14th. I talked with a woman to whom Jesus lately appeared, but immediately vanished out of her sight. Never did I see a soul more inconsolable. Esther Owen was with me, pierced, melted, overpowered with love.

At Blackheath I preached redemption in the blood of Jesus. He gave me power "to sound the unbelieving heart." A woman screamed out so loud that I could not be heard; and therefore had her removed, but not out of hearing. To the scoffers I spoke with much contention. Many were driven off, and others constrained to stay. I am sure the word did not return void.

I found Mr. Hall at Fetter-lane, asking them, whether they would try their spirits by the word, or the word by their spirits. I enforced the question, which they strove to evade. Rabbi Hutton forbade their answering me. I warned the few remaining brethren to beware of the leaven of stillness; showed them the delusion of those who had cast off the ordinances, and confined the faith to themselves only; I foretold the dreadful consequences of their enthusiasm; set the case of Gregor before their eyes; besought, entreated, conjured them not to renounce the means, or deny the Lord that bought them; read a letter from one who had been strongly tempted to leave off the sacrament, But, in receiving, powerfully convinced that her dissuader was the devil. Hodges, Hall, and Howel Harris confirmed my words. Others were hereby emboldened to bear their testimony to the divine ordinances. By the strength of the Lord we have stood between the living and the dead; and the plague, we trust, is stayed.

Poor James was all tergiversation. O how unlike himself; The honest, plain, undesigning Jacob, is now turned a subtle, close, ambiguous Loyola. Bell was more frank, and I therefore put him upon speaking. He expressly denied the sacrament to the unjustified; that is, in effect, to all but Molther, M. Eusters, and himself; for these three are all the

church Christ has in England.

I mentioned Simpson's advice to M. Seaton, that if she would but leave off the sacrament, prayer, and reading the Scriptures, for one week, she should then find what she never found before in her life. He justified his advising her, and several others, to lay aside their Bibles, because he trusted in them. The rest abated somewhat of their stiffness, and much pressed me "to preach Christ the foundation;" meaning, that I should not recommend the ordinances, but let them trample on them undisturbed. I did not say that I understood them.

Ascension-day, May 15th. I preached from Rom. 8:33, 34. Great power accompanied the word; but greater still, while I exhorted the Society to wait for the promise of the Father. Many cried out in the birth-pangs. After a long and violent struggle, Eleanor Tubbs testified that God had now showed her her heart, and broke it in pieces, and bound it up.

241

Sarah Church informed me she had received forgiveness the night Mr. Simpson expounded at Rag-fair; not under his preaching, which was quite dead to her, but in singing an hymn which I gave out. So did Anne Roberts, after hearing the word, in the same carnal ordinance of

singing.

Mary Shrievly, who has been groaning under the burden of sin from the time she first heard me preach, was last night relieved by the coming of Jesus, and now goes on her way rejoicing. Jane Bourn also informs me that she received forgiveness in the Society, and was sprinkled from her idols.

Fri., May 16th. Almost the whole Society met at one. A spirit of contrition ran through all. I received the following letter: -

"My Friend, - I hear there are divisions among you; for some say, 'I am of Wesley;' and others, 'I am of Molther;' but I say, I am of Christ; and what he bids me do, I will do, and not trust in any man.

"Here some will say, 'What Christ bids you do, is, to believe and be still.' True; but does he bid me do nothing else? He bids me let my light so shine before men, that they may see my good works, and glorify my Father which is in heaven.

"He likewise says, 'The scribes and Pharisees sit in Moses's chair; all therefore whatsoever they bid observe, that observe and do.' But how can I know what they bid me do, except I go to hear them?

"Again: Christ bids me observe all things which he commands the Apostles; and with such He will be to the end of the world. But if I do

not observe and do his commands, he will not be with me.

"He bids me 'do this in remembrance of Him.' Now, if any man can prove this is not a command, I will obey it no longer. 'But whosoever breaketh one of these least commandments, and teacheth men so, shall be called least in the kingdom of heaven.'

"As to stillness, our Saviour saith, 'The kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force;' and, 'Strive to enter in at the strait gate.' And St. Paul saith, 'Work out your salvation with fear and trembling.' And, 'God is a rewarder of them that diligently seek Him.'

242

Now these scriptures imply somewhat more than barely sitting still.

"Some deny that there are any means of grace: but I will be thankful for them; since it was in them I first heard you preach faith in Christ; and had I not been there, I might have been without faith unto this day.

"One told me, when you preached you had nature in your face. So will every one have, who speaks with zeal; but no matter for that, if he has but grace in his heart. My friend, there are many teachers, but few fathers; but you are my father, who begot me by the Gospel, and, I trust, many more.

"May the Lord lead you into all truth!"

Sat., May 17th. I expounded the chapter in course, Isaiah 53. One could not bear my enlarging on that, "The Lord hath laid on Him the iniquity of us All;" but often interrupted me with, "Stop his mouth." Alas! thought I, if meekness be the mark of the elect, I fear thou art still a reprobate.

I dined at Mr. Williams's. His wife had formerly found favour with God under the word; but Satan reasoned her out of it. After our praying, she said she had an answer in herself at every word. All doubt and unbelief fled away and she clearly saw her interest in the Saviour of all men.

Sun., May 18all. I preached to near ten thousand at the Common, from 1 Cor. 6:9, &c. The Lord was with us in his convincing power. I would give Him the glory.

Mon., May 19th. Our brethren complain, that we unjustly charge them with speaking against the ordinances. Yet they teach, that your using them before faith, necessarily keeps you out of it; and your using them after faith, necessarily makes you lose it. Particularly when you find comfort, by no means offer to pray, they say: if you pray then, you will forfeit it immediately.

Ridley is famous for saying, "You may as well go to hell in praying as in thieving." Mr. Brown's words are, "If we read, the devil reads with us; if we pray, he prays with us; if we go to church or sacrament he goes

243

with us."

In the time of conference Mary Benham declared her faith, which she has lately received. Anne Judge found power to believe under the word last Monday; Thomas Boreman, while we were at prayers.

While I expounded the woman of Samaria, the word reached many hearts, particularly Mrs. Ash the Quaker's, a great enemy to crying out. However, she could not now forbear; for the love of Christ constrained her. Jesus had said, "I that speak unto thee am He!" Her sister appeared under strong convictions at the sight of her. O that the flame might spread throughout all the earth!

Tues., May 20th. Poor desperate John Dickenson received the word of reconciliation, Isaiah 54: "For a small moment have I forsaken thee, but with great mercies will I gather thee," &c. After having been long afflicted, tossed with tempests, and not comforted, in that hour he found rest to his soul.

At eleven, Eliz. Bird testified her having lately felt the atoning blood; as likewise Astrea Edzard and Thomas Haddock; all by the ministry of

the word. Mary Wotlen, too, can set to her seal, that God is true. I found S. Sutherland strong in the Lord. Several others were present, whom I took knowledge of, that they have been with Jesus.

I went with Maxfield to Bray's, as a fool to the correction of the stocks. I laboured for peace: but only the Almighty can root out those cursed tares of pride, contempt, and self-sufficiency, with which our Moravianized brethren are overrun.

Wed., May 21st. I carried Bridget Armstead to Bloomsbury church, where the Minister baptised her. She had been bred a Quaker. I was one of the witnesses. We were all in great heaviness before; but perceived that Christ was with us always in his ordinances. The Spirit infallibly bears witness on this occasion. Our youngest sister assuredly knows that she is born of water and of the Spirit.

Thur., May 22nd. I found our dear brother Ingham at M. West's. The holiday mob was very outrageous at the Foundery. God filled my mouth with threatenings and promises. Both, I believe, took place; for at last we got the victory, and the fiercest rioters were overawed into

244

silence.

The day of Pentecost, May 25th. I discoursed on the first pouring out

of the Spirit. (Acts 2). He gave me utterance. Many felt his descent in an invisible power; and even trembled at his presence.

At the Common I again declared the Promise to many thousands. At the love-feast I was overwhelmed with the burden of our brethren, with such visible signs of dejection, that several, I was since informed, were in great hopes that I was now coming down in my pride, or unsettling, and coming into confusion. Indeed, my faith did well nigh fail me: for in spite of the seeming reconciliation which brother Ingham forces them into, it is impossible we should ever be of one mind, unless they were convinced of their abrogating the law of Christian ordinances, and taking away the children's bread.

Mon., May 20th. A woman from Islington complained to me, that she had brought Mr. Stonehouse to her mother, who lay a-dying, but waiting for redemption. Her Minister told her, "it signified nothing to pray either publicly or privately. Reading the Scriptures, or taking the sacrament, were equally useless. These outward things must all be laid aside. She had nothing to do but to be still." He refused to pray by her, and so left her.

The work of grace goes on in several that were with me to-day; and God still gives fresh seals to my ministry.

Tues., May 27th. I rejoiced to find no difference betwixt my brother

Ingham and me. He has honestly withstood the deluded brethren; contradicted their favourite errors, and constrained them to be still. That blot he easily hit: "You say no man must speak of what he has not experienced: you, Oxley and Simpson, say, that one in Gospel-liberty can have no stirrings of sin." "Yes." "Are you in Gospel-liberty?", "No." "Then out of your own mouth I judge you: you speak of the things which you know not of." I expounded in Snowsfield, and met the bands at the Foundery. An extraordinary power overshadowed us. S. Hunting received the witness in herself; R.R. was even lost in love.

Wed., May 28th. At Blackheath I discoursed from Matt. 21: "He that falleth on this stone shall be broken," &c. There were a multitude of 245 scoffers, but all forced to fly before the sword of the Spirit. I talked once more with our wild brethren, and laboured heartily for peace and union. But it cannot be, while they are so full of bitter, proud contempt of all except themselves.

Thur., May 29th. I expounded Isai. 57, a chapter most contradictory to the doctrine of our brethren. I dined at friend Keen's, a Quaker and a Christian; and read George Whitefield's account of God's dealings with him. The love and esteem he expresses for me, filled me with confusion, and brought back my fear, lest, after having preached to others, I should be myself a cast-away. At Marybone the scoffers

fulfilled the scripture I explained: "The wicked are like the troubled sea, when it cannot rest, whose waters cast up mire and dirt." I addressed myself to one of them after another, and silenced them on whatever side I turned. Sometimes a stray coach would stop: but my doctrine did not suit them. Our Lord vouchsafed us much of his presence at the Society. We find him daily uncovering our hearts, casting down imaginations, and bringing every thought into captivity. The souls of many were smitten asunder as with a sword; and I am sure, if God wounds, he will bind up again.

Fri., May 30th. I had yet another conference, but could not convince our dear brother Simpson. He cannot allow there are more than four Christians in London, which are Molther, M. Eusters, Wheeler's maid, and Bell. Of the last he roundly affirms, that he is holier than Moses, the meekest of men; than Abraham, the friend of God; than David, the man after God's own heart; than Elijah and Enoch, who walked with God, and were translated. As to our father Abraham, he denies him to have had any right faith at all.

Sat., May 31st. I took sweet counsel with Benjamin Ingham, and Howel Harris. A threefold cord cannot easily be broken.

I heard that the Foundery was lately presented at Hicks's Hall, for a

sedition assembly. Sir John Gunson interposed, and objected, that no persons were named in the presentment. Upon this they presented Charles Wesley, Clerk, J. Hutton, bookseller, Timothy Lewis, printer, and Howel Harris, alias the Welsh Apostle. But our friend Sir John quashed the whole.

246

Sun., June 1st. I was much refreshed in spirit among the women bands. They have rest, and walk in the comfort of the Holy Ghost, and are edified.

Mon., June 2nd. I preached up the ordinances, as they call it, from Isai. 58; but first with the Prophet I preached them down. Telchig, Ingham, &c., were present, which made me use greater plainness, that they might set me right, if I mistook.

I talked with several in whom the work of conversions effectually begun; particularly Mary Russel, convinced and deeply wounded by my last discourse at Kennington; Mary Peck, whom God showed her heart in singing; Sarah Redford, to whom faith lately came by hearing; and Mary Litchfield, who, by all I can yet discern, was justified the last time I preached at Blackheath.

I preached on Job 23:8, I would hope, to the comfort of many, whose hearts God is directing into the love of Christ, and into the patient

waiting for him.

Tues., June 3rd. I met with Amos Comenius's moving exhortation of the Bohemian churches to the Church of England. O that we might see, at least in this our day! Who knows but our eyes may behold "the last surviving Bishop of the Church of England!"

Wed., June 4th. I preached at Marybone on, "What must I do to be saved?" The opposers had threatened me hard; but all they now could do was to curse and swear. I only invited them to Christ. But I am more and more persuaded, that the law has its use, and Moses must bring us to Christ. The promises to the un-wakened are pearls before swine. First the hammer must break the rocks; then we may preach Christ crucified.

Thur., June 5th. My brother returned from Bristol.

Fri., June 6th. I spoke with Billah Aspernel, who had lately been with me in the depth of mourning. A still brother had been troubling her, and deterring from the word and sacrament. Last night it pleased our Lord to lift up her head above all her enemies. He spoke to her in the word, and she had joy again, and her joy shall no man take from her.

247

Martin Chow and Margaret Martin at the same time found the power of the Lord present to heal them; as did Eleanor Gambel the Thursday

before.

I went with my brother, and Howel Harris, and J. Purdy, to see Molther, at Islington. I wished George Stonehouse joy of his good bargain; and left him to justify to my brother the selling of his living. I half persuaded a Dissenter out of her faith of adherence.

I explained the progress of grace by our Lord's comparison of the grain of mustard-seed, and the little leaven.

Sat., June 7th. I recommended the woman of Canaan as a pattern of triumphant importunity. It is plain she had not heard of the doctrine of stillness.

Mon., June 9th. I dined at Mr. Wild's, in Islington, and rejoiced over a few unpervverted souls. The shepherd, alas, is smitten, and the sheep are scattered; but not all. God has left himself a very small remnant.

Tues., June 10th. I rode with Maxfield to Bexley, and was greatly comforted with my brother Piers. The weak stand when the strong fall. In spite of all the still ones, he had held fast the truth, neither forsaking the ordinances, nor denying his weak faith.

I went thence to Blendon: no longer Blendon to me. They could hardly force themselves to be barely civil. I took an hasty leave, and with an heavy heart, weighed down by their ingratitude, returned to Bexley.

Here I preached the Gospel to a little flock, among whom the grievous wolves are not entered.

Wed., June 11th. I was constrained to bear my testimony for the last time at Blendon. Maxfield accompanied me. I desired to speak with Mrs. Delamotte alone. She did not well know how to refuse, and walked with me into the hall. I began, "Three years ago God sent me to call you from the form to the power of godliness. I told you what true religion was, a new birth, a participation of the divine nature. The way to this I did not know myself till a year after. Then I showed it to you, preaching Jesus Christ, and faith in his blood. You know how you treated me; God soon after called you to a living faith by my ministry. Then you received me as an angel of God. Where is now the

248

blessedness you spake of? Whence is this change this jealousy, and fear, and coldness? Why are you thus impatient to hear me speak?"

She offered several times to leave me; said, "She did not know what I meant; did not want to dispute," &c. "I do not come to dispute: why are you afraid of me? What have I done? You gave as a reason for not seeing me in town, that you did not care to be unsettled. Once I unsettled you through the strength of the Almighty, stirred you up from your lees, took you off your own works, and grounded you upon

Christ. Other foundation than this can no man lay. I only desire to settle you more firmly upon Him, to warn you against the danger of being removed from the hope of the Gospel. Our brethren, whom now you follow, are making a schism in the church: follow them not in this." She would not bear any more, but hurried into the parlour. When I came in, Betty left it; but afterwards returned. She has not been at the sacrament for several months. I warned them against casting off the ordinances, which were divine commands, binding all, whether justified or unjustified.

They continually interrupted me, asking why I talked to them. I answered, "Because I durst not forbear, but must deliver my own soul." Betty said she had received great benefit from Molther, and should therefore hear none but him. I told her, I had nothing to say against her hearing him, unless when he spoke against the ordinances.

Upon their again and again bidding me silence, I asked, "Do you, therefore, at this time, in the presence of Jesus Christ, acquit, release, and discharge me from any farther care, concern, or regard for your souls? Do you desire I would never more speak unto you in His

name?" Betty frankly answered, "Yes." Mrs. Delamotte assented by her silence. "Then here," said I, "I take my leave of you, till we meet at the judgment-seat." With these words I rendered up my charge to God.

"Then said I," after leaving them, "I have laboured in vain, I have spent my strength for nought; yet surely my judgment is with the Lord, and

my work with my God." Surely this is enough to wean and make me cease from man. With Blendon I give up all expectation of gratitude upon earth. Vanity of vanities, all is vanity, even friendship itself.

I rode on softly to Eltham, cast out by my dearest friends. I pray God it

249

may not be laid to theirs, or their seducers', charge! Pity and grief for them was uppermost in my heart; and these were much relieved by

the scripture that first offered: "And Paul went down, and fell on him, and, embracing him, said, Trouble not yourselves, for his life is in him."

I returned to be exercised by our still brethren's contradiction. My brother proposed new-modelling the bands, and setting by themselves those few who were still for the ordinances. Great clamour was raised by this proposal. The noisy still-ones well knew that they had carried their point, by wearying out the sincere once, scattered among them, one or two in a band of disputers, who had harassed and sawn them asunder; so that a remnant is scarcely left. They grudged us even this remnant, which would soon be all their own, unless immediately rescued out of their hands. Benjamin Ingham seconded us; and obtained that the names should be called over, and as many as

were aggrieved put into new bands.

We gathered up our wreck: for nine out of ten are swallowed up in the dead sea of stillness. O, why was not this done six months ago? How fatal was our delay and false moderation! "Let them alone, and they will soon be weary, and come to themselves of course," said one, - one man, by delaying, has restored the state to us! I tremble at the consequence. Will they submit themselves to every ordinance of man, who refuse subjection to the ordinances of God? I told them plainly I SHOULD ONLY CONTINUE WITH THEM SO LONG AS THEY CONTINUED IN THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND. My every word was grievous to them. I am a thorn in their sides, and they cannot bear me. They modestly denied that we had any but hearsay proof of their denying the ordinances. I asked them all and every one, particularly Bray, Bell, &c., whether they would now acknowledge them to be commands or duties; whether they sinned in omitting them; whether they did not leave it to every man's fancy to use them or not; whether they did not exclude all from the Lord's table, excepting those whom they called believers. These questions I put too close to be evaded; though better dodgers never came out of the school of Loyola. Honest Bell and some others spoke out, and insisted upon their antichristian

liberty. The rest put by their stillness, and delivered me over to Satan for a blasphemer, a very Saul, (for to him they compare me,) out of

250

blind zeal persecuting the church of Christ.

Thur., June 12th. The power of the Lord was present in his word, both to wound and heal. The adversary roared in the midst of the congregation; for to him, and not to the God of order, do I impute those horrible outcries which almost drowned my voice, and kept back the glad tidings from sinners.

Fri., June 13th. At Wapping some so disturbed us by their outcries, that my preaching was vain. Those who cried, "Away with them," I rebuked; but wish for the sake of all, and myself also, that, if it be the will of God, this stumbling-block may be removed.

At the time of intercession, we were carried out for all mankind, especially for our own Church and nation, and the little flock which God is gathering. I prayed believing, that Satan might not destroy his work, as in the last age, by that spirit of rebellion and enthusiasm which is so visible in our deluded brethren.

Mon., June 16th. M. Sparrow carried me to Eltham, where I called to many, in King John's chapel, "Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to

the waters." It was indeed a solemn assembly. We found God had formerly recorded his name there, and that was one place of meeting Him. Several of the assembly-ladies heard me patiently, while I showed them they were in no wise better than the harlots and publicans.

Tues., June 17th. I had an extraordinary meeting of the Society, now increased from twelve to three hundred, most of them justified; and took my leave of them with hearty prayer.

Wed., June 18th. I set out at two for Oxford, with brother Maxfield, and a nephew I was going to prentice at Bristol. We stopped half-an-hour at brother Hodge's; lost our way through Kensington; baited an hour at Gerard's-cross. Three miles short of Wycombe, several people met, and asked us if we had seen an highwayman, who had shot a man on the road, not an hour ago. In a mile's riding, we found the poor man weltering in his blood. The Minister of Wycombe informed us, that he was a little behind, and heard the highwayman threaten to shoot him, if he did not deliver his money that instant. He answered, "You shall

251

have all the money I have; but it is not much;" and the other, without any more words, shot him through the head.

I could not but observe the particular providence of God over us. Had

we not delayed in the morning, had we not called on Hodges, had we not stopped at Gerard's-cross, we had just met the murderer.

Thur., June 19th. Hearing he was apprehended at a farrier's, his horse having cast a shoe, I went this morning to tell him, Christ died to save murderers; but his heart was harder than the nether millstone.

By noon we came to Oxford. I called on M. Ford, and found her shut up. She besought me not to speak in the Society, not to make disturbances and divisions, &c. I told her, I spoke no other words than I had from the beginning; whence then her unusual apprehensions Mr. Simpson's presence accounted for it. Wherever he comes, his first business is to supplant us, which he does by insinuating himself, under the appearance of our friend.

To the Society I described the stillness of the first Christians; (Acts 2:42;) who continued in the Apostles' doctrine, and in fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.

Fri., June 20th. At the desire of some Baptists in Mainsbury, I expounded Rom. vii.; but not at all to their satisfaction. They could not see any higher state of perfection than what is there described.

Sat., June 21st. Such an unaccountable heaviness came over me on the road, that I was forced to light and lie down for a quarter of an hour. I

rose refreshed with this little sleep, and rode forward till we met a poor old man of eighty: was enabled to preach the Gospel to his heart.

We left him looking up to Jesus, and went on praising God.

My first greeting in Kingswood was by one of our colliers' daughters. I then rejoiced with William Hooper and Hannah Cennick. In the evening at the Malt-room I addressed myself to those in the wilderness. O what simplicity is in this childlike people! A spirit of contrition and love ran through them. Here the seed has fallen upon good ground.

Sun., June 22nd. I went to learn Christ among our colliers, and drank

252

into their spirit. We rejoiced for the consolation. O that our London brethren would come to school to Kingswood! These are what they

pretend to be. God knows their poverty; but they are rich; and daily

entering into rest, without being first brought into conclusion. They

do not hold it necessary to deny the weak faith, in order to get the

strong. Their soul truly waiteth still upon God, in the way of his

ordinances. Ye many masters, come learn Christ of these outcasts; for

know, except ye be converted, and become like these little children, ye

cannot enter into the kingdom of heaven.

I met several of those whom I had baptized, and found them grown in

grace. Some thousands waited for me at Rose-green, to whom I expounded Ezek. 16. And surely the Lord passed by, and said to some in their blood," Live." I concluded the day at the men's love-feast.

Peace, unity, and love are here. We did not forget our poor distracted brethren that were, till the Moravians came.

How ought I to rejoice at my deliverance out of their hands and spirit!

My soul is escaped as a bird out of the snare of the fowler. Leave, break out, escape. And did I not love the lambs of Christ, indeed, the grievous wolves, I would see your face no more.

I am no longer a debtor of the Gospel to you. Me ye have fairly discharged; but if you reject my testimony, others receive it gladly, and say, "Blessed be he that cometh in the name of the Lord."

Tues., June 24th. I preached Christ, the way, the truth, and the life, to one thousand little children at Kingswood. At the room I proceeded in St. John. Some were present who fancy themselves elect, and therefore sink back into their old tempers. Without meddling in the dispute, I rebuked them sharply, yet in much love. I read my Journal to the bands, as an antidote to stillness.

Thur., June 26th. I saw Mrs. T_____ under the buffetings of Satan, to whom she is plainly delivered over, for her pride and envy. O that she

may learn hence not to blaspheme, or mimic the Spirit of God, with her imaginary experiences!

In my farther exposition of Ezek. 16, the secrets of many hearts were revealed. When some cried out, I bade the people be quiet, that Satan

253

might lose his end. Those noisy souls I believed sincere; but he tormented them to make them confound the work, and hinder the

word of God. Immediately, as if his device was discovered, the enemy withdrew, and the outcries ceased.

Sat., June 28th. I met the bands in Kingswood, and reprov'd Hannah Barrow before them all. She would not be convinced of her pride; but was sure she had the witness of the Spirit, and the seal, and what not. I tremble to think what will be the end.

Sun., June 29th. I found the spirit of the colliers before I began to speak. Then my mouth was opened to declare the promise of sanctification, in Ezekiel. I gave the sacrament to about eighty colliers; exhorted the last-baptized; met the men-Leaders; preached to the usual congregation at Rose-green; and returned without strength to the Horsefair.

When I am weak, then I am strong; and was never more enlarged, nor I think so much, as in speaking from that scripture: "Holding forth the

word of life, that I may rejoice in the day of Christ, that I have not run in vain, neither laboured in vain." Many in that hour found heaven begun upon earth.

Mon., June 30th. I spent a week at Oxford to little purpose but that of obedience to man for the Lord's sake. In the Hall I read my two lectures on Psalm 130, preaching repentance towards God and faith in Jesus Christ. But learned Gallio cared for none of these things.

Yet even in this place God did not leave himself without witnesses. He began to call them forth; but where are they now all scattered by those refiners on Christianity who make the cross of none effect, and forbid men to remember God in his ways. Therefore, when I came in the name of the Lord Jesus, there was no man; when I called them to Him, there was none to answer; or at most a score, out of the multitude which Mr. Viney found.

Sun., July 6th. I preached at Stanton-Harcourt in the morning, at Southleigh in the afternoon; then expounded blind Bartimeus at Mr. G.'s. The next evening I discoursed on the good Samaritan.

Tues., July 8th. I came to Malmsbury with Mr. Robson; and the next

254

day to Bristol. I met the Lord among his people. Brother Robson said,

"It is good for me to be here;" and that the half had not been told him of God's goodness to this little flock.

Fri., July 11th. This morning he preached on Lazarus raised, with the demonstration of the Spirit. I carried him to Kingswood: he was in love with our colliers.

Sat., July 12th. I passed the afternoon with them. They grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. We cannot be among them, and not perceive the divine presence.

Sun., July 13th. I gave the sacrament to above seventy of them, different from those who received the last time. I preached at Rose green on the fall of man. (Gen. 3). I dare not depart from the work, while God so strengthens me therein. We walked over the waste to the school, singing and rejoicing. It was their love-feast. Two hundred were assembled in the Spirit of Jesus. Never have I seen and felt such a congregation of faithful souls. I question whether Hernhuth can now afford the like.

Tues., July 15th. To the colliers I described, what many of them have experienced, religion, a participation of the divine nature. At Bristol I pressed the example of the primitive Christians, (Acts 4,) and tasted something of their spirit.

Wed., July 16th. I was convincing the natural man of sin, when a poor

sinner cried out vehemently, "What do you mean by looking at me, and directing yourself to me, and telling me I shall be damned" I did then address myself to him; but he hurried away with the utmost precipitation.

At the time of intercession, the Spirit greatly helped our infirmities. We began with particulars; but at last were enlarged in prayer for all mankind. I dissuaded one who was strongly tempted to leave the fellowship. The devil knows what he does: Divide and rule, will carry the world before him.

While I was meeting the bands, my mouth was opened to rebuke, reprove, exhort, in words not my own. All trembled before the presence of God. I was forced to cut off a rotten member; but I felt

255

such love and pity at the time, as humbled me into the dust. It was as if one criminal was made to execute another. We betook ourselves to

fervent prayer for him, and the Society. The Spirit was poured out; and we returned unto the Lord in weeping, and mourning, and praying.

Thur., July 17th. I admitted near thirty new members into the Society.

Sun., July 20th. Our poor colliers being repelled from the Lord's table, by most of the Bristol Ministers, I exhorted them, notwithstanding, to continue daily with one accord in the temple; where the wickedest

administrator can neither spoil the prayers, nor poison the sacrament.

These poor sinners have ears to hear.

Wed., July 23rd. I talked with Mrs. T - , who justifies God, and the wisdom of his children, taking shame to herself, and confessing that spiritual pride was the sole occasion of her fall.

In the bands I reproved one who was fallen asleep again, and yet horribly confident she was in a good way, and should go to heaven if she died that moment. I tried the weapons of our warfare upon her strong-holds, and pulled them down, to the conviction of all but herself. At last she raged and tore like a mad woman; this child of God, with her full assurance of faith! I showed the rest, through her, the deceitfulness of the heart, and the blinding power of Satan.

Thur., July 24th. I went to see her, lest Satan should get irrecoverable advantage over her. She was more mode-rate, but still in the false assurance of unbelief, in the spirit of self-delusion. What an exertion of omnipotence does such a soul require to re-awaken it!

At night I took occasion, from Acts 7, to discourse on the sin of resisting the Holy Ghost. It sent the word home to many souls.

Sun., July 27th. I heard a miserable sermon at Temple church, recommending religion as the most likely way to raise a fortune. After

it, proclamation was made, "that all should depart who were not of the parish." While the shepherd was driving away the lambs, I stayed, suspecting nothing, till the Clerk came to me, and said, "Mr. Beacher bids you go away, for he will not give you the sacrament." I went to the vestry-door, and mildly desired Mr. Beacher to admit me. He asked, "Are you of this parish?" I answered, "Sir, you see I am a Clergyman."

256

Dropping his first pretence, he charged me with rebellion in expounding the Scriptures without authority; and said in express words, "I repel you from the sacrament." I replied, "I cite you to answer this before Jesus Christ at the day of judgment." This enraged him above measure. He called out, "Here, take away this man!" The Constables were ordered to attend, I suppose lest the furious soldiers should take the sacrament by force: but I saved them the trouble of taking away this man, and quietly retired.

I preached the Gospel in Kingswood with double power, from Isai. 40: "Comfort ye, comfort ye my people, saith your God." Before sermon, I declared our brother Cennick's entire agreement with me in the belief of universal redemption; and he confirmed my saying with an hymn of his own. Never did I find my spirit more knit to him.

At Rose-green, though my bodily strength was gone, I was carried out

beyond myself in speaking of God's free-grace to sinners.

Mon., July 28th. I spoke searchingly on those words of our Lord:

"Nevertheless, I tell you the truth; it is expedient for you that I go away; for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come," &c.

Tues., July 29th. One, pestered with the predestinarians, desired me to expound Rom. 9. I did, through Christ strengthening me, in an extraordinary manner. The poor creature Wildboar contradicted and blasphemed, and even called for damnation upon his own soul, if Christ died for all, and if God was willing that all men should be saved. The power of the Lord was present so much the more. Many believed with their heart, and made confession with their mouth, of Jesus Christ the Saviour of all men. I have not known a more triumphant night since I knew Bristol.

Sun., August 3rd. I preached Jesus Christ to the colliers from Isai. 63:

"Who is this that cometh from Edom, with dyed garments from Bozrah?" Great power was in the midst. Many wept. I myself was much affected. At Rose-green my text was, "Drop down, ye heavens, from above, and let the skies pour down righteousness." It rained hard: but that did not interrupt their attention. I was comforted at the women's love-feast.

Tues., August 5th. I talked sharply to Jenny Dechumps, a girl of twelve years old; who now confessed that her fits and cryings out (above thirty of them) were all feigned, that Mr. Wesley might take notice of her.

Wed., August 6th. In great heaviness I spoke to the women-bands, as taking my farewell: sang the hymn which begins, -

"While sickness shakes the house of clay,

And, sapp'd by pain's continued course,

My nature hastens to decay,

And waits the fever's friendly force."

After speaking a few faint words to the brethren, I was immediately taken with a shivering; and then the fever came. The next morning I was bled, and carried by M. Hooper to her house. There I looked into the Bible, and met with, "The Lord will strengthen him upon the bed of languishing, thou wilt make all his bed in his sickness." My pain and disease increased for ten days; so that there was no hope of my life: but then Jesus touched my hand, and rebuked the fever, and it left me. I had no apprehension of death myself. It was reported I was dead, and published in the papers: but God had not finished (O that he had effectually begun!) his work in me: therefore he held my soul in life;

and made all things work together for my recovery.

Dr. Middleton, an utter stranger to me, God raised up, and sent to my assistance. He refused taking any fees, and told the Apothecary he would pay for my physic, if I could not. He attended me constantly, as the divine blessing did his prescriptions; so that in less than a fortnight the danger was over.

For the next fortnight I recovered slowly, but had little use of my legs, and none of my head. One of our comers, taken ill of the same fever since me, has died in full triumph of faith.

When I was just able to stand, my brother came from London. We rode out most days in Mr. Wane's, or an hired, chariot, comparing our dense temptations and deliverances.

258

I found myself, after this gracious visitation, more desirous and able to pray; more afraid of sin, more earnestly longing for deliverance, and the fulness of Christian salvation.

September 7 - December 31, 1740

Sun., September 7th. As soon as my bodily weakness would permit, I returned to my old hours of retirement; but with fear, and earnest prayer that I might not rest in my own works or endeavours. Mr. Cary's Curate informed us, that Mr. Cary had ordered him to repel my

brother and me from the sacrament.

Wed., September 10th. It rained all day, but cleared up when I went to the bands. A few words I spoke in great weakness; and they seemed not spoken in vain.

Mon., September 15th. I passed two or three days at Mr. Arthur's, in Kingswood, and, by the blessing of God, recovered the use of my understanding, which was so clouded, that I could neither read nor think.

Thur., September 18th. Out of weakness I was made strong to preach at the room to-night; not for a quarter of an hour, as I proposed, but for an hour and an half.

Fri., September 19th. "They that wait upon the Lord shall renew their strength." So I found it this morning, both in soul and body. At night I was enabled to preach Anne Hodges's funeral sermon.

Mon., September 22nd. I was setting out for the Downs, when one asked me to ride out toward Mr. Willis's. At the end of the town I was informed the colliers were risen. Above one thousand of them I met at Lawrence-hill They came about me, and saluted me very affectionately, not having seen me since my sickness. The occasion of their rising, they told me, was the dearness of corn. I got to an

eminence, and began speaking to them. Many seemed inclined to go back with me to the school; but the devil stirred up his oldest servants, who violently rushed upon the others, beating, and tearing, and driving them away from me. I rode up to a ruffian who was striking one of our colliers, and prayed him rather to strike me. He would not, he said, for all the world; and was quite overcome. I turned

259

upon one who struck my horse, and he also sank into a lamb.

Wherever I turned, Satan lost ground; so that he was obliged to make one general assault, and, by the few violent colliers, forced on the quiet ones into the town.

I seized on one of the tallest, and earnestly besought him to follow me: that he would, he said, all the world over. About six more I pressed into Christ's service. We met several parties; stopped and exhorted them to join us. We gleaned a few from every company, and grew as we marched along singing to the school. From one till three we spent in prayer that evil might be prevented, and the lion chained. Then news was brought us that the colliers were returned in peace. They had quietly walked into the city, without sticks, or the least violence. A few of the better sort went to the Mayor, and told their grievance: then

they all returned as they came, without noise or disturbance. All who saw were amazed; for the leopards were laid down. Nothing could have more shown the change wrought in them than this rising.

I found afterwards that all our colliers to a man had been forced in it. Having learned of Christ not to resist evil, they went a mile with those that compelled them rather than free themselves by violence. One the rioters dragged out of his sick-bed, and threw him into the Fishponds: near twenty of Mr. Willis's men they got by threatening to fill up their pits, and bury them alive, if they did not come up and bear them company.

Tues., September 23rd. Mr. W. Seward came, and was very cordial. We prayed, rejoiced, and gave thanks. If I did not love him the better for his opinion, I am sure it made me more industrious to confirm my old love towards him.

I carried him to Mr. Wane's, and then to our colliers; before whom I set the things they would have done in the late rising, had not grace restrained them. One poor man declared, when they forced him away, he would much more willingly have gone to the gallows.

Mr. Seward spoke a few words to them, which did not convince me of his call to preach. In our return, he told me Mrs. Grevil and others had

urged him to claim the room in the Horse-fair; but he abhorred their baseness.

260

Wed., September 24th. He told me he was in a mist; the Baptists last night having laboured hard to make him oppose me publicly. Before

we parted, all was set right again. Yet a few hours after, he came from them, and utterly renounced both me and my brother, in bitter words of hatred, which they had put in his mouth. I pray God lay not this sin to their charge, neither all the weakness of word and action which ensued for the following days.

God endues my soul and body also with much strength. This day he has comforted me on every side. To Him be all the glory.

Fri., September 26th. I was greatly assisted in the evening to preach the Christian perfection, that is, utter dominion over sin; constant peace, and love, and joy in the Holy Ghost; the full assurance of faith, righteousness, and true holiness. I see more and more into the height of our privileges, and that God will give them to me.

Sun., September 28th. At the sacrament I received power to believe sin shall not have dominion over me. I reached many hearts in expounding blind Bartimeus. Our love-feast was such as deserved the name. We all rejoiced in hope of the glory of God.

Mon., September 29th. God was wonderfully with our assembly, and opened my eyes to see the promise of holiness, or perfection, not in some, but in almost every, scripture.

Thur., October 2nd. I rejoiced to hear that M. Puruell was on Sunday morning, under the word, taken into the very borders of Canaan. The patient abiding of the meek shall not perish for ever.

Sun., October 5th. I offered myself at the sacrament, and was not refused, though Mr. Cary himself administered. I received it with comfort.

Mon., October 6th. I prayed by Margaret Thomas. At my first visit, she hoped her sins were forgiven. Now she more than hoped it, having received the faith which works by love, and filial fear of offending.

I met the Leaders; and endeavoured to humble one who begins to grow rich, not by denying what God has done for his soul, but by showing him he could no more trust to his graces than his works, but

261

must still come to Christ as a poor sinner that has need of all things.

Wed., October 8th. I took down the case of Catherine Hyfield. She was charged with robbing her master (one Townsend) of £800; whose dying wife my brother had visited. Alderman Day, &c., threatened to

put her in irons, &c., if she would not confess she had given the money to my brother. When no proof could be brought against her, they were forced to discharge her: and soon after, her master found the money where himself had lodged it.

Thur., October 9th. I was much revived by the sight of Margaret Thomas, dying in the highest triumph of faith. I could not help asking, "Is this the soul so late weigh'd down
By cares and sins, by griefs and pains
Whither are all thy terrors gone
Jesus for thee the victory gains,
And death, and sin, and Satan yield
To faith's unconquerable shield."

Her hope was now full of immortality. She had no desire of life or death, or ease in her great pain. God had finished his work; and her will was quite swallowed up in his. This is that holiness without which no one shall see the Lord.

Fri., October 10th. I prayed by Mrs. Purnell, who patiently waits for the seal of her pardon. At night I spoke strongly to the unawakened; and, behold, a cry! but such as became poor lost sinners. Great was the stirring among the dry bones.

Sun., October 12th. From Isai. 64. I was assisted to stir up those who had settled upon their lees, since they were justified. I visited Margaret, now at the haven where she would be, and only waiting the word, "Come up hither!" Her spirit helped me wonderfully in prayer. She told me, she had been heard in my behalf, and God would give me an humble heart.

Mon., October 13th. I breakfasted and gave an exhortation to some of
262

our friends. One seemed so deeply affected, that her outcries much interrupted me. I took no notice of her, seeing she could not help it; only said at last, "I do not think the better of you for this;" and immediately her trouble was over, and she hushed and unconcerned as before.

Wed., October 14th. At the intercession, our casting down was in the midst of us. O that I was always as I am sometimes! But a fit or start of humility is not to be depended on.

Thur., October 16th. I rejoiced in an opportunity of heaping coals of fire upon the head of an enemy. Poor Mitchel, arrested by Charles Martin, sent me first a reproaching, and then a begging, letter. I paid his debt, and won him at a very moderate price.

Fri., October 17th. I prayed by Mrs. Purnell, near death. She had no

fear, and no assurance of pardon; but believed she should know her sins forgiven before she went hence. I called again at noon; and then the Lord had showed her his salvation, and she could confidently testify, "God for Christ's sake hath forgiven me."

Sun., October 19th. I called on a dying man, who told me he hoped to be saved through Christ, because he was one of the worst of sinners.

"If that be your plea," said I, "you must be damned without all remedy." I proceeded to set before him the spirituality of the law, and

the terrors of the Lord. He fought hard against God, often repeating the words of his predecessor, "I am not like other men," reproaching my Master, not me, and refusing to humble himself under the mighty hand of God. He told me he never desired to see me more; yet, when I offered to go, he desired me to pray by him. I did, in faith, that God might open his eyes to see himself the chief of sinners. He begged me to call again.

I gave the sacrament to Mrs. Purnell; who, after receiving the cup, cried, "It is!" I visited her once more in her last conflict; yet, even then, by plain signs expressing her confidence. She held out till Wednesday morning, October 22nd; and then departed to the church triumphant.

I met the Leaders, and removed one, (J. W.) who was much lifted up, but lay concealed from herself by a voluntary humility. She cheerfully

resigned an office which she owned herself so unfit for; yet, afterwards, I heard, complained, with many tears, that I should think ill of her from the report of others. The next day she was taken with a fit of humility, and bade a sister go and tell it me. "Anybody now," she said, "might trample upon me: do you, pray, trample upon me; but tell Mr. Wesley." Verily, "the heart is deceitful above all things. Who can know it"

Thur., October 23rd. I met several of the bands at the house of our departed sister Purnell, and solemnly rejoiced over her, with singing. I walked with the funeral as far as the church; then hastened back to the room, where lay the corpse of Margaret. Her spirit was, with the other's, returned to God. A wonderful power accompanied the word preached, 1 Cor. 15. O what triumph did we find in the house of mourning! Many strangers were convinced. The Society attended her to the grave, and praised God with joyful lips for her translation.

Fri., October 24th. I was greatly enlarged in enforcing that promise, "The Lord knoweth how to deliver out of temptation." I showed them the only infallible way to conquer sin, namely, "Sin shall not have dominion over me, because I believe in Jesus Christ that it shall not." A poor drunkard believed, and had a witness that he shall no more turn

back to his own wickedness.

Sun., October 26th. I heard Mr. Tucker's (not railing) accusation against the Methodists, "that they went contrary to custom; did not catechise their children; did not reform men in the regular way." He told us farther, what Mr. Whitefield would say when he returned from Georgia; and concluded with an excellent quotation out of Mr. Law. I offered my assistance at the sacrament, which he civilly declined.

Mon., October 27th. I met a young gentlewoman who was never under the word till the night of our triumphant funeral. Then it laid hold on her heart: yet I could not persuade her to expect the promise, till she had endeavoured, and mourned, and waited longer.

In the evening I set the terrors of the Lord in array against sinners, and an horrible dread overwhelmed some of them. May the law be their schoolmaster to bring them to Christ.

264

Tues., October 28th. I was exceedingly shocked with the news of Mr. Seward's death: but he is taken from the evil; rescued out of the hands of wicked men. Calling on the Pharisee whom I had visited last week, I found him dead; but at the last hour he had cried unto Jesus, as a poor, undone sinner, who was like other men.

I was led in the evening to preach universal redemption from those words, "The Lord is not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance." The Spirit mightily confirmed that irresistible truth. I then spoke with unfeigned concern of our dear departed brother; and with just abhorrence of those unhappy bigots, whose headlong zeal had robbed us of him. We sang a funeral hymn over him, and were comforted in the hope of soon meeting him again, where no sower of tares, no reprobating Pharisee, shall ever part us more.

Fri., October 31st. The time for my going to Wales is now come. To-day Captain Philips challenged me; said he came to fetch me; and Mr. Wells invited me to preach in his churches.

I passed an hour with two very wise Quakers, who were for inverting the order of God, and making Christ our sanctification before he is our righteousness. The true Light, I trust, will one day teach them better.

Tues., November 4th. At Kingswood Mr. Cennick showed me a letter from Howel Harris, wherein he justified poor Mr. Seward, and talked of declaring against us himself. With the loss of him and all things, I am commanded to preach the Gospel to every creature. I did so to the colliers, from Titus 2:11; and was carried out more than ever before,

till all were drowned in tears of love.

While I was testifying Christ died for all, Mr. Cennick, in the hearing of many, gave me the lie. I calmly told him afterwards, "If I speak not the truth as it is in Jesus, may I decrease, and you increase."

Thur., November 6th. At six I took boat for Cardiff, and at six in the evening landed on Welsh ground with the voice of praise and thanksgiving. Mr. Wells, who invited me over, waited to give me the first greeting. From his house we went to the Society, where God opened my mouth to call, "Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the

265

waters." They received the word with all readiness.

I lodged at Mr. Glascot's.

Fri., November 7th. I rode with Mr. Williams to St. Andrew's, a little town four Welsh miles from Cardiff. Mr. Wells was not afraid to trust me in his pulpit. I was greatly assisted to invite many poor sinners to come weary and heavy laden to Christ. They gladly received my saying. Mr. Hodges desired me to preach next Tuesday in his church at Wenvo. I returned to Cardiff rejoicing; and expounded I John 1, to the conviction, I hope, of many.

Sat., November 8th. I had an opportunity to moderate the spirits of

some who were greatly exasperated against Howel Harris, for preaching predestination among them. After church I waited with Mr. Wells on the sick Minister; who was extremely civil, invited me to dinner, and to preach in his pulpit morning and evening. I spent the day in singing and close conference, with some who would fain persuade themselves they had faith, without forgiveness. My Master, I trust, will soon persuade them that they have both together.

Sun., November 9th. At six I explained the legal state, from Rom. vii. I read prayers, and preached to a large congregation, "All have sinned and come short of the glory of God." I administered the sacrament to many strangers. I read prayers in the afternoon, baptized a child, and preached both law and Gospel with great plainness. My hearers were surprisingly patient. Only one went out. I continued my discourse till it was dark; and had much comfort in having delivered my message.

The scripture to be expounded at night was, 1 John 2: "If any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father," &c. God opened my mouth to declare the truth of his everlasting love to all mankind. At the same time he enlarged my heart to its opposers. I took the occasion to speak of Howel Harris; bore such a testimony of him as he deserves; and mildly upbraided them for their ingratitude toward the greatest

benefactor their country ever had. We all expressed our love by joining in hearty prayer for him.

Mon., November 10th. I set out for St. Nicholas; called at Llandaff on the then officiating Minister, to ask the pulpit. He referred me to the

266

Chapter; but I do not mean to trouble them. The church at St. Nicholas, also, was shut against me; but we met at a neighbouring house, Mr.

Deer's, where I offered Christ to all sinners, with much freedom and power.

At Cardiff I spoke a word in season to one (Sus. Young) who was puffed up, and boasted of her graces, and took upon her to teach others. I told her she had deceived her own soul, and brought a scandal on religion. She flew out into self-justification: God knew her heart, would not quench the smoking flax, &c. But I cut her short, and, with six plain words, God accompanying them with his power, struck her down into the deep. She cried out, "I am damned, I am damned," and was stripped of all, as in one moment.

I sent a messenger to Howel Harris, with the following letter: "My dearest Friend and Brother, - In the name of Jesus Christ I beseech you, if you have his glory and the good of souls at heart, come immediately, and meet me here. I trust we shall never be two in time

or eternity. O my brother, I am grieved that Satan should get a moment's advantage over us; and am ready to lay my neck under your feet for Christ's sake. If your heart is as my heart, hasten, in the name of our dear Lord, to your second self,

"C. WESLEY."

Tues., November 11th. The church at Wenvo was full as it could hold, while I preached the Gospel from the good Samaritan. All were visibly affected. I went to Mr. Hodges; took sweet counsel with him and Mr. Wells. The former, at parting, in great simplicity desired my prayers and a kiss.

Wed., November 12th. In Lanissan church I preached on, "Repent, and believe the Gospel." Our Lord was never more with me than at this time. I concluded with earnest prayer for the Curate. I dined at Mr. Wells's with several of the brethren, and Mr. Thomas, a neighbouring Curate of great simplicity, who preaches not himself, but Christ Jesus the Lord.

Thur., November 13th. I went with reluctance to the prisoners, almost despairing to do any good, when I received faith to believe Christ

267

would be with me. I looked up to him; and never preached the Gospel with greater freedom. Two women fell down as dead. The infection

ran through us all, and we felt that the Gospel was indeed the power of God.

The three Ministers, Mr. Wells, Hodges, and Thomas, made part of my evening congregation; to whom I showed in strong words the blessedness of persecution.

Fri., November 14th. I rode with Mr. Hodges to Micelston-Lepil. He read prayers: I preached Christ from, "Who is this that cometh from Edom with dyed garments." &c. He was evidently set forth before our eyes as crucified. I rode back in the spirit of triumph. I heard the players had sent me a challenge; that is, a ticket and invitation to their play. Suffice for the time past. I now serve another Master.

Sat., November 15th. At Mr. Price's, in Watford, I preached "Christ our wisdom, righteousness, sanctification, and redemption;" and again at five with double power. An Arian Minister of our own Church, and a Baptist teacher, were present. The latter could not allow either justification or sanctification necessary to salvation.

Sun., November 16th. Mr. Williams informed me that many had bound themselves with a curse to make a disturbance in the church, and not suffer me to preach. Then the Clerk told me I as not to preach in the afternoon. I answered, I had not expected to preach there in the

morning, or, indeed, a second time.

The Psalms began, "O God, the Heathen are come into thine inheritance; thy holy temple have they defiled."

The Second Lesson was very animating, being John 8; that earnest contention of our Lord with the Pharisees.

My text was, "If God be for us, who can be against us?" I began abruptly with the opposers, and defied them in the name of the Lord Jesus. The Spirit of power was with me; but I soon perceived him as the Spirit of love; and besought those unhappy sinners to be reconciled unto God. Their master durst not hazard their staying any longer; but, in the midst of my discourse, hurried them out of church.

268

I went on convincing and entreating the Pharisees to submit to the righteousness of God. Never was my mouth and heart more enlarged.

Upon my repeating, "It pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save all them that believe," a gentleman rose, and turned his back on the Gospel of his salvation. I called after him in vain; then earnestly prayed for him and the rest, the Spirit helping my infirmity.

I read prayers in the afternoon. Many hungry souls were disappointed through my not preaching. I sent them to the Society. Several players were present, but quickly fled before the sword of the Spirit. When we

were departing, Mr. Wells stopped us to hear his unexpected apology for me. He strongly enforced the truths I had delivered; and, with great humility, asked me to set him right, if he had spoken ought contrary to sound doctrine.

Mon., November 17th. Again my mouth was opened to preach the law and the Gospel at Llantrissant. Mr. Harris, the Minister, was exceeding civil. He had been dealt with to refuse me the pulpit, but would not break his word.

Tues., November 18th. I preached at St. Bride's, "Thou shalt call his name Jesus," &c. Here, too, I east my net to catch the fisher. We were setting out from the public-house when God brought Howel Harris to us. All misunderstandings vanished at sight of each other, and our hearts were knit together as at the beginning. We sang an hymn of triumph. God had prepared his heart for this meeting. At the sacrament he had found the spirit of martyrdom falling upon him, and immediately I was brought to his remembrance. His heart overflowed with love, and he thought we were going hand in hand to the stake. Before the Society, several were with me, desiring me, now I had gotten him, to reprove him openly. Some wanted me to preach against lay-preaching; some against predestination, &c. In my discourse on Isai. xl., a gentleman, who had come thither on purpose, interrupted

me, by desiring I would now speak to Mr. Harris, since I was sent for to disprove his errors, and Mr. Wells, an experienced Clergyman, sat by to moderate between us. God gave me immediate recollection. I smiled at Satan's impudence; but turned aside the question with mildness, and thanks to the proposer. In vain he urged me to enter the

269

lists with my friend. I quashed all farther importunity by declaring, "I am unwilling to speak of my brother Howel Harris, because, when I begin, I know not how to leave off; and should say so much good of him, as some of you could not bear." The gentleman, disappointed of his hope, immediately departed.

After this victory over Satan, I proceeded with double power, addressing myself particularly to the ladies, whose company we were favoured with because there was no play to-night, I showed them they were no better than common harlots, if they outwardly differed from them through pride, not virtue. The Lord open their hearts to receive my hard saying.

The Captain giving me notice that he should sail the next day, I determined to spend the night in taking leave. We supped at the friendly Mr. Wells's, and then called at Captain Philips's. Between ten and eleven, just as I was going, Satan began to show his wrath at the

many sore disappointments he has met with this very day. He could not set the children of God against each other, and was therefore forced to make use of his own. The Physician, who had gone out of church on Sunday, stirred up by his companions, and unusually heated with wine, came and demanded satisfaction of me for calling him Pharisee. I said, "I was ready to acknowledge my mistake, if he would assure me he had gone out of church to visit his patients." He replied, "He had gone out because he disliked my discourse." "Then, Sir," said I, "I cannot ask pardon for telling you the truth." "But you must for calling me a Pharisee." "I still insist you are a Pharisee, and cannot endure sound doctrine. My commission is, to show you your sins; and I shall make no apology for so doing, to you or any man living. You are a damned sinner by nature, and a Pharisee, like me: and this testimony I should bear before rulers and Kings. You are a rebel against God, and must bow your stiff neck to Him before you can be forgiven." "How do you know my heart?" "My heart showeth me the wickedness of the ungodly." "Sir, I am as good a Christian as yourself." "You are no Christian at all, unless you have received the Holy Ghost." "How do you prove that you have the Holy Ghost?" "By searching your heart, and showing you that you are a Pharisee." Here he lifted up his cane, and struck me. Mrs. Philips intercepted and broke the blow; F.

Farley tripped up his heels; and the company rushed in between. My soul was immediately filled with the calm, recollected boldness of

faith. There was a great outcry among the women. Several of them he struck, and hurt, and raged like one possessed, till the men forced him out, and shut the door.

Soon after, it was broken open by a Justice, and the Bailiff, or head-Magistrate. The latter began expostulating with me upon the affront

offered the Doctor; and said, "As it was a public injury, I ought to make him public satisfaction." I answered, "Mr. Bailiff, I honour you for your office's sake; but was you yourself, or His Majesty King George, among

my hearers, I should tell you both that you are by nature damned

sinner. In the church, while preaching, I have no superior but God;

and shall not ask man leave to show him his sins. As a ruler, it is your duty to be a terror to evil-doers, but a praise to them that do well."

Upon my thus speaking, he became exceeding civil; assured me of his good-will, and that he had come to prevent my being insulted; and none should touch an hair of my head.

While we were talking, the Doctor made another attempt to break in,

and get at me; but the two Justices and others with much trouble at

last got him out. They went; and we continued our triumph in the

name of the Lord our God. The shout of a King was among us. We sang

on unconcerned, though those sons of Belial, the players, had beset the house. They were armed, and threatened to burn the house. The ground of their quarrel with me is, that the Gospel has starved them. We prayed and sang with great tranquillity till one in the morning. Then I lay down till three; rose again; and was scarce got into the room, when they discovered a player just by me, who had stole in unobserved. They seized him, and F. Farley wrested the sword from him. There was no need of drawing it, for the point and blade were stripped an hand-breadth of the scabbard.

When the sword was brought in, the spirit of faith was kindled among us, at sight of the danger. Great was our rejoicing within, and the uproar of the players without, who strove to force their way after their companion. My female advisers were by no means for my venturing out, but deferring my journey. I preferred Mr. Wells's advice of going with him, through the midst of our enemies. I called in on the poor

271

creature they had secured. They talked of warrants, prosecutions, &c.

On sight of me he cried, "Indeed, Mr. Wesley, I did not intend to do you any harm." "That," I answered, "was best known to God, and his own heart: but my principle was, to return good for evil; wherefore I

desired he might be released;" assured him of my good wishes, and

with Mr. Wells walked peaceably to the water-side, no man forbidding me. Our friends stood on the shore, while we joined in hearty thanksgiving. The fierceness of men shall turn to thy praise, and the fierceness of them shalt thou restrain.

Wed., November 19th. Between five and six we were forced to return for want of water. I found Howel Harris and the flock still at Captain Philips's, and was strengthened to lay open the promise of sanctification. (Ezek. 36). I took leave of my dear Howel; and with Mr. Wells waited upon the Bailiff; acknowledged his last night's civilities; and left him, as a trophy, the player's sword. In public prayer, Mr. Wells returned thanks to God for our late deliverance.

At two I took my leave of the Society, and preached the pure Gospel from the woman of Canaan. A spirit of love constrained me to beseech them, with tears, to receive Christ Jesus. It ran through all. Some of the greatest opposers wept, especially a young lady, for whose entertainment the players had acted me, sang, and prayed, and trembled exceedingly. The word was as a fire that melteth the rocks. I saw why God had brought me back. Our parting was such as it ought to be.

About four, Mr. Wells, &c., attended me to the vessel. I laid me down,

and slept, and took my rest; for it is thou, Lord, only, that makest me dwell in safety.

Thur., November 20th. By five this morning, He who blest our going out, blest our coming in to Bristol. I found my brother at the room, expounding Rom. 9. I confirmed his saying, and gave some account of my success in Wales. A great power accompanied the word, and I prayed in the Spirit. I joined with him in administering the sacrament to a young woman I had baptized, but who had not kept her garments unspotted. Yet God healed her backslidings, and soon after she confidently resigned her spirit into the hands of Jesus.

272

Fri., November 21st. My brother returned to London.

Sun., November 23rd. I was very dead in delivering it, yet the word was mixed with faith in some that heard it, as they afterwards testified.

Thur., November 27th. At the Malt-house, the spirit of love and supplication fell upon me. I was filled with the tenderest concern for the desolate Church of England; which I could not help expressing before the congregation in tears, and strong cries to God for her.

Sun., November 30th. I gave the sacrament to our sister Taylor, dying

in triumph. Here is another witness to the truth of our Gospel.

Commend me to a religion upon which I can trust my soul, while entering into eternity.

I expounded the lesson at Kingswood. It was Hebrews 6. I prayed Christ our Teacher to enlighten the people and me; and began my discourse with fear and trembling.

The Spirit gave me utterance. I calmly warned them against apostasy, and spake with great tenderness and caution. But who can stand before envy and bigotry? The strong ones were offended. The poison of Calvin has drunk up their spirit of love. Anne Ayling and Anne Davis could not refrain from railing. John Cennick never offered to stop them. Alas! we have set the wolf to keep the sheep! God gave me great moderation toward him, who, for many months, has been undermining our doctrine and authority.

Mon., December 1st. I passed two hours at M. Parsons's funeral, and looked with envy on the corpse in the coffin. Her soul, before it left the body, was sweetly and fully conscious of its reconciliation with God.

The word has been a saviour of life to her also.

While I was showing the universality of Christ's redemption, the flame was kindled all around, and the Holy Ghost bore witness with many

consciences.

Tues., December 2nd. I had a conference in Kingswood with Mr. Cennick and his friends, but could come to no agreement, though I offered entirely to drop the controversy if he would.

273

I preached on the three-fold office of Christ, but never with greater power. It constrained even the separatists to own that God was with us of a truth. I rode back in a glorious storm of thunder, lightning, and rain. My spirit rejoiced in hope of the glory of God.

He opened my mouth again at the Society; and I spoke in much grief and love of our desolate mother the Church of England. My heart yearns towards her when I think upon her ruins, and it pitieth me to see her in the dust.

Thur., December 4th. I administered the sacrament to Mr. Page, against hope believing in hope. After receiving, he had power to believe his sins forgiven.

Fri., December 5th. I was much refreshed in spirit among some of my friends, the Quakers, by a writer of theirs, who strongly insists on the perfect death unto sin, and life unto righteousness, which every Christian experiences. Death must precede life, and condemnation justification. This he as clearly teaches, as any of our first Reformers.

Sat., December 6th. I wrote my brother a full account of the predestinarian party, their practices and designs, particularly "to have a church within themselves, and to give themselves the sacrament in bread and water."

Sun., December 21st. I took my leave of the colliers in the words of the great Apostle, (without comparing myself to him,) "And now, Brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace." The loving spirit was mightily among us, and more still at our love-feast, for all the brethren of Kingswood and Bristol.

Mon., December 22nd. I showed, with demonstration of the Spirit, the (ordinary) necessity of our being bruised and broken before the Comforter would abide in us for ever. He who saith, "My work is before me," set to his seal.

Wed., December 24th. At five I set out for London, which I reached, with Thomas Maxfield, the next day by five in the afternoon. At six God renewed my strength to preach the glad tidings to a crowded audience at the Foundery. Great was our joy in the Lord, and in each other.

274

Fri., December 26th. I rose at five, without feeling my journey, and expounded Isai 40:9: "O Zion, that bringest good tidings, get thee up

into the high mountain," &c. He spake comfortably to his people by my mouth, though I am nothing.

I talked with one, who has entirely stopped the work of God in her own soul, by judging of it in others.

A spirit of contrition fell upon me the moment I entered the Society-room. We made supplication for all men, especially the household of faith, and that small part of it at Bristol.

Sat., December 27th. From eleven to one I met five or six hundred, to praise God with the voice of joy and thanksgiving. He hath done great things for us already, but we shall see greater things than these. I

dined at a Dissenter's, armed cap-a-pie with her faith of adherence, brim full of the five points, and going on to the perfection of Rom. 7.

At Mr. Craven's, a man abruptly accosted me, "Are you ready to receive my message?" "Yes," I answered, "if you speak not of yourself." "I speak to you from God."

"Where are your credentials? What proof show you of your divine commission?" "Nay, nay," said he, "if you cannot receive my saying, I have nothing to do with you. I have delivered my own soul." With these he flung away, and left his prophecy imperfect.

Sun., December 28th. In the evening the scoffers were very outrageous. God filled my mouth with threatenings and promises. I

defied and invited them by turns, till he got himself the victory; and I freely published the glad tidings, "To us a son is born, to us a child is given."

I earnestly warned the bands not to fancy they had new hearts before they had seen the deceitfulness of the old; not to think they would ever be above the necessity of praying; not to yield for one moment to the spirit of judging.

Among my visitants this morning I had a very ingenious person, who generously proffered to teach me the grand arcanum for the value of five shillings. Having no need of money, I declined his proffer; but gave

275

him sixpence, and told him, as he had the art of transmutation, it was the same as if I had given him half a guinea. We had more serious talk

before parting: how to change an heart of stone into an heart of flesh.

Tues., December 30th. I exhorted the Society at Deptford with convincing power. A woman fell down under it.

Wed., December 31st. I found the Spirit of prayer among the bands in London, and strongly exhorted them to humility.

276

Document Outline

- [The Journal of Charles Wesley.](#)
- [March 9 - August 30, 1736](#)
- [September 4 - December 30, 1736](#)
- [May 2 - August 31, 1737](#)
- [September 9 - December 31, 1737](#)
- [January 5 - April 30, 1738](#)
- [May 1 - August 31, 1738](#)
- [September 1 - December 26, 1738](#)